



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES

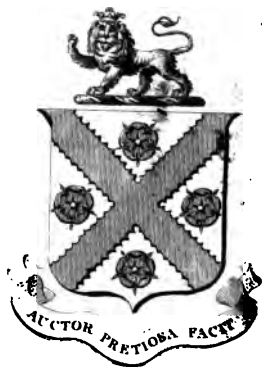


3 3433 07489863 0

LEDOX LIBRARY



nox Collection.
1870.



James Lenoir



ANC
1971





Thurston del.

Blades sculp.

WINTERS' TALES,

"FOR SHE WAS AS TENDER,

AS INFANCY AND GRACE. —

Act 5. Scene 3.

London Published by Thomas Tegg, No. 111, Cheapside, May 15th 1813.

1850
No. 10
W. D. & H. O. WILKINSON
LONDON



LONDON:

Printed by Thomas Taylor, No. 10, Ave-Mary-Street.

April 21, 1850.



THE MONUMENT

TO THE MEMORY OF

THE LATE

MR. J. H. HARRIS

DECEASED

APRIL 10, 1880

TO APRIL 10, 1890

BY THE BOARD OF

TRUSTEES OF THE

CITY OF BOSTON

DRAMATIC WORKS
OF
William Shakespeare
VOL. V.
in Faint



LONDON.

Printed for Thomas Tegg N^o. 71. Cheapside.

April 24. 1813.
c. m. h.



WINTER'S TALE.

VOL. V.

▲

WINTER'S TALE.]—This play, throughout, is written in the very spirit of its author. And in telling this homely and simple, though agreeable, country tale,

Our sweetest Shakespeare, fancy's child,
Warbles his native wood-notes wild.

This was necessary to observe, in mere justice to the play; as the meanness of the fable, and the extravagant conduct of it, had misled some of great name into a wrong judgement of its merit; which, as far as it regards sentiment and character, is scarce inferior to any in the whole collection.

WARBURTON.

At Stationers' Hall, May 22, 1594, Edward White entered "A booke entitled *A Wynter Nyght's Pastime*."

STEEVENS.

The story of this play is taken from *The Pleasant History of Dorastus and Fawnia*, written by Robert Greene.

JOHNSON.

In this novel, the King of Sicilia, whom Shakespeare names

Leontes, is called Egistus.
Polixenes, K. of Bohemia . . . Pandosto.
Mamillius P. of Sicilia . . . Garinter.
Florizel P. of Bohemia . . . Dorastus.
Camillo Franion.
Old Shepherd Porrus.
Hermione Bellaria.
Perdita Faunia.
Mopsa Mopsa.

The parts of Antigonus, Paulina, and Autolycus, are of the poet's own invention; but many circumstances of the novel are omitted in the play.

STEEVENS.

Dr. Warburton, by "some of great name," means Dryden and Pope. See the Essay at the end of the Second Part of *The Conquest of Granada*: "Witness the lameness of their plots; [the plots of Shakespeare and Fletcher;] many of which, especially those which they wrote first, (for even that age refined itself in some measure,) were made up of some ridiculous incoherent story, which in one play many times took up the business of an age. I suppose I need not

name, *Pericles, Prince of Tyre*, [and here, by-the-by Dryden expressly names *Pericles* as our author's production,] nor the historical plays of Shakespeare; besides many of the rest, as *The Winter's Tale*, *Love's Labour's Lost*, *Measure for Measure*, which were either grounded on impossibilities, or at least so meanly written, that the comedy neither caused your mirth, nor the serious part your concernment." Mr. Pope, in the Preface to his edition of our author's plays, pronounced the same ill-considered judgement on the play before us: "I should conjecture (says he,) of some of the others, particularly *Love's Labour's Lost*, *THE WINTER'S TALE*, *Comedy of Errors*, and *Titus Andronicus*, that only some characters, single scenes, or perhaps a few particular passages, were of his hand."

None of our author's plays has been more censured for the breach of dramattick rules than *The Winter's Tale*. In confirmation of what Mr. Steevens has remarked in another place—"that Shakespeare was not ignorant of these rules, but disregarded them,"—it may be observed, that the laws of the drama are clearly laid down by a writer once universally read and admired, Sir Phillip Sidney, who, in his *Defence of Poesy*, 1595, has pointed out the very improprieties into which our author has fallen in this play. After mentioning the defects of the tragedy of *Gorboduc*, he adds: "But if it be so in *Gorboduche*, how much more in all the rest, where you shall have Asia of the one side, and Affricke of the other, and so manie other under kingdoms, that the player when he comes in, must ever begin with telling where he is, or else the tale will not be conceived.—Now of time they are much more liberal. For ordinarie it is, that two young princes fall in love, after many traverses she is got with childe, delivered of a faire boy: he is lost, groweth a man, falleth in love, and is readie to get another childe, and all this in two houres space: which how absurd it is in sence, even sence may imagine."

The Winter's Tale is sneered at by B. Jonson, in the Induction to *Bartholomew Fair*, 1614: "If there be never a servant-monster in the fair, who can help it, nor a nest of antiques? He is loth to make nature afraid in his plays, like those that beget TALES, *Tempests*, and such like droleries." By the nest of antiques, the twelve satyrs who are

introduced at the sheep-shearing festival, are alluded to.— In his conversation with Mr. Drummond of Hawthornden, in 1619, he has another stroke at his beloved friend: “ He [Jonson] said, that Shakespeare wanted art, and sometimes sense; for in one of his plays he brought in a number of men, saying they had suffered shipwreck in Bohemia, where is no sea near by 100 miles.”—Drummond’s Works, fol. 225, edit. 1711.

When this remark was made by Ben Jonson, *The Winter’s Tale* was not printed. These words, therefore, are a sufficient answer to Sir T. Hanmer’s idle supposition that *Bohemia* was an error of the press for *Bythinia*.

This play, I imagine, was written in the year 1604. See *An Attempt to ascertain the Order of Shakespeare’s Plays*, Vol. II.

MALONE.

Sir Thomas Hanmer gave himself much needless concern that Shakespeare should consider Bohemia as a maritime country. He would have us read *Bythinia*: but our author implicitly copied the novel before him. Dr. Grey, indeed, was apt to believe that *Dorastus and Faunia* might rather be borrowed from the play; but I have met with a copy of it, which was printed in 1588.—Cervantes ridicules these geographical mistakes, when he makes the princess Micomicona land at Ossuna.—Corporal Trim’s king of Bohemia “delighted in navigation, and had never a sea-port in his dominions;” and my Lord Herbert tells us, that De Luines, the prime minister of France, when he was ambassador there, demanded, whether Bohemia was an inland country, or lay “upon the sea?”—There is a similar mistake in *The Two Gentlemen of Verona*, relative to that city and Milan.

FARMER.

The Winter’s Tale may be ranked among the historic plays of Shakespeare, though not one of his numerous criticks and commentators have discovered the drift of it. It was certainly intended (in compliment to Queen Elizabeth,) as an indirect apology for her mother, Anne Boleyn. The address of the poet appears no where to more advantage. The subject was too delicate to be exhibited on the stage without a veil; and it was too recent, and touched the Queen too nearly, for the bard to have ventured so home an allusion on any other ground than compliment. The

unreasonable jealousy of Leontes, and his violent conduct in consequence, form a true portrait of Henry the Eighth, who generally made the law the engine of his boisterous passions. Not only the general plan of the story is most applicable, but several passages are so marked, that they touch the real history nearer than the fable. Hermione on her trial says:

“————— for honour,
“ ’Tis a derivative from me to mine,
“ And only that I stand for.”

This seems to be taken from the very letter of Anne Boleyn to the King before her execution, where she pleads for the infant Princess his daughter. Mamilius, the young Prince, an unnecessary character, dies in his infancy; but it confirms the allusion, as Queen Anne, before Elizabeth, bore a still-born son. But the most striking passage, and which had nothing to do in the tragedy, but as it pictured Elizabeth, is, where Paulina, describing the new-born Princess and her likeness to her father, says: “*She has the very trick of his frown.*” There is one sentence indeed so applicable, both to Elizabeth and her father, that I should suspect the poet inserted it after her death. Paulina, speaking of the child, tells the King:

“————— ’Tis yours;
“ And might we lay the old proverb to your charge,
“ So like you, ’tis the worse.”—

The Winter’s Tale was therefore in reality a second part of *Henry the Eighth*.

WALPOLE.

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

~~~~~

LEONTES, *king of Sicilia :*  
MAMILLIUS, *his son.*  
CAMILLO,  
ANTIGONUS, } *Sicilian lords.*  
CLEOMENES, }  
DION, }  
*Another Sicilian lord.*  
ROGERO, *a Sicilian gentleman.*  
*An Attendant on the young prince Mamillius.*  
*Officers of a court of judicature.*  
POLIXENES, *king of Bohemia :*  
FLORIZEL, *his son.*  
ARCHIDAMUS, *a Bohemian lord.*  
*A Mariner.*  
*Gaoler.*  
*An old Shepherd, reputed father of Perdita:*  
Clown, *his son.*  
*Servant to the old shepherd.*  
AUTOLYCUS, *a rogue.*  
Time, *as Chorus.*

HERMIONE, *queen to Leontes.*  
PERDITA, *daughter to Leontes and Hermione.*  
PAULINA, *wife to Antigonus.*  
EMILIA, *a lady,* } *attending the queen.*  
*Two other ladies,* }  
MOPSA, } *shepherdesses.*  
DORCAS, }

*Lords, Ladies, and Attendants; Satyrs for a dance.*  
*Shepherds, Shepherdesses, Guards, &c.*

**SCENE,** *sometimes in Sicilia, sometimes in Bohemia.*

# WINTER'S TALE.

---

---

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—Sicilia. *An antechamber in Leontes' palace.*

*Enter CAMILLO and ARCHIDAMUS.*

*Arch.* If you shall chance, Camillo, to visit Bohemia, on the like occasion whereon my services are now on foot, you shall see, as I have said, great difference betwixt our Bohemia, and your Sicilia.

*Cam.* I think, this coming summer, the king of Sicilia means to pay Bohemia the visitation which he justly owes him.

*Arch.* Wherein our entertainment shall shame us, we will be justified in our loves: for, indeed,—

*Cam.* 'Beseech you,——

*Arch.* Verily, I speak it in the freedom of my knowledge: we cannot with such magnificence—in so rare—I know not what to say.—We will give you sleepy drips; that your senses, unintelligent of our insufficiency, may, though they cannot praise us, as little accuse us.

*Cam.* You pay a great deal too dear, for what's given freely.

*Arch.* Believe me, I speak as my understanding instructs me, and as mine honesty puts it to utterance.

*Cam.* Sicilia cannot show himself over-kind to Bohemia. They were trained together in their childhoods; and there rooted betwixt them then such an affection, which cannot choose but branch now. Since their more mature dignities, and royal necessities, made separation of their society, their encounters, though not personal, have been royally attornied, with interchange of gifts, letters, loving embassies; that they have seemed to be together, though absent; shook hands, as over a vast; and embraced, as it were, from the ends of opposed winds. The heavens continue their loves!

*Arch.* I think, there is not in the world either malice, or matter, to alter it. You have an unspeakable comfort of your young prince Mamillius; it is a gentleman of the greatest promise, that ever came into my note.

*Cam.* I very well agree with you in the hopes of him: It is a gallant child; one that, indeed, physicks the subject, makes old hearts fresh: they, that went on crutches ere he was born, desire yet their life, to see him a man.

*Arch.* Would they else be content to die?

*Cam.* Yes; if there were no other excuse why they should desire to live.

*Arch.* If the king had no son, they would desire to live on crutches till he had one. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*The same. A room of state in the palace.*

*Enter* LEONTES, POLIXENES, HERMIONE, MAMILLIUS, CAMILLO, and *Attendants.*

*Pol.* Nine changes of the wat'ry star have been  
The shepherd's note, since we have left our throne

Without a burden : time as long again  
 Would be fill'd up, my brother, with our thanks ;  
 And yet we should, for perpetuity,  
 Go hence in debt : And therefore, like a cipher,  
 Yet standing in rich place, I multiply,  
 With one we-thank-you, many thousands more  
 That go before it.

*Leon.* Stay your thanks awhile ;

And pay them when you part.

*Pol.* Sir, that's to-morrow.

I am question'd by my fears, of what may chance,  
 Or breed upon our absence : That may blow  
 No sneaping winds at home, to make us say,  
*This is put forth too truly!* Besides, I have stay'd  
 To tire your royalty.

*Leon.* We are tougher, brother,  
 Than you can put us to't.

*Pol.* No longer stay.

*Leon.* One seven-night longer.

*Pol.* Very sooth, to-morrow.

*Leon.* We'll part the time between's't then : and in  
 that

I'll no gain-saying.

*Pol.* Press me not, 'beseech you, so ;  
 There is no tongue that moves, none, none, i' th'  
 world,

So soon as yours, could win me : so it should now,  
 Were there necessity in your request, although  
 'Twere needful I denied it. My affairs  
 Do even drag me homeward : which to hinder,  
 Were, in your love, a whip to me ; my stay,  
 To you a charge, and trouble : to save both,  
 Farewell, our brother.

*Leon.* Tongue-tied, our queen ? speak you.

*Her.* I had thought, sir, to have held my peace until  
You had drawn oaths from him, not to stay. You, sir,  
Charge him too coldly: Tell him, you are sure,  
All in Bohemia's well: this satisfaction  
The by-gone day proclaim'd; say this to him,  
He's beat from his best ward.

*Leon.* Well said, *Hermione.*

*Her.* To tell, he longs to see his son, were strong:  
But let him say so then, and let him go;  
But let him swear so, and he shall not stay,  
We'll thwack him hence with distaffs.—  
Yet of your royal presence [*To POLIXENES.*] I'll ad-  
venture

The borrow of a week. When at Bohemia  
You take my lord, I'll give him my commission,  
To let him there a month, behind the gest  
Prefix'd for's parting: yet, good deed, *Leontes,*  
I love thee not a jar o' th' clock behind  
What lady she her lord.—You'll stay?

*Pol.* No, madam.

*Her.* Nay, but you will?

*Pol.* I may not, verily.

*Her.* Verily!

You put me off with limber vows: But I,  
Though you would seek t' unsphere the stars with  
oaths,

Should yet say, *Sir, no going.* Verily,

You shall not go; a lady's verily is

As potent as a lord's. Will you go yet?

Force me to keep you as a prisoner,

Not like a guest; so you shall pay your fees,

When you depart, and save your thanks. How say you?

My prisoner? or my guest? by your dread verily,  
One of them you shall be.

*Pol.* Your guest then, madam:  
To be your prisoner, should import offending;  
Which is for me less easy to commit,  
Than you to punish.

*Her.* Not your gaoler then,  
But your kind hostess. Come, I'll question you  
Of my lord's tricks, and yours, when you were boys;  
You were pretty lordings then.

*Pol.* We were, fair queen,  
Two lads, that thought there was no more behind,  
But such a day to-morrow as to-day,  
And to be boy eternal.

*Her.* Was not my lord the verier wag o' th' two?

*Pol.* We were as twinn'd lambs, that did frisk i' th'  
sun,  
And bleat the one at th' other: what we chang'd,  
Was innocence for innocence; we knew not  
The doctrine of ill-doing, no, nor dream'd  
That any did: Had we pursued that life,  
And our weak spirits ne'er been higher rear'd  
With stronger blood, we should have answer'd heaven  
Boldly, *Not guilty*; the imposition clear'd,  
Hereditary curs.

*Her.* By this we gather,  
You have tripp'd since.

*Pol.* O my most sacred lady,  
Temptations have since then been born to us: for  
In those unfledg'd days was my wife a girl;  
Your precious self had then not cross'd the eyes  
Of my young play-fellow.

*Her.* Grace to boot!



Of this make no conclusion ; lest you say,  
 Your queen and I are devils : Yet, go on ;  
 The offences we have made you do, we'll answer ;  
 If you first sinn'd with us, and that with us  
 You did continue fault, and that you slipp'd not  
 With any but with us.

*Leon.* Is he won yet ?

*Her.* He'll stay, my lord.

*Leon.* At my request, he would not.  
 Hermione, my dearest, thou never spok'st  
 To better purpose.

*Her.* Never ?

*Leon.* Never, but once.

*Her.* What ? have I twice said well ? when was't  
 before ?

I pry'thee, tell me : Cram us with praise, and make us  
 As fat as tame things : One good deed, dying tongue-  
 less,

Slaughters a thousand, waiting upon that.  
 Our praises are our wages : You may ride us,  
 With one soft kiss, a thousand furlongs, ere  
 With spur we heat an acre. But to th' goal ;—  
 My last good deed was, to entreat his stay ;  
 What was my first ? it has an elder sister,  
 Or I mistake you : O, would her name were Grace !  
 But once before I spoke to th' purpose : When ?  
 Nay, let me have't ; I long.

*Leon.* Why, that was when  
 Three crabbed months had sour'd themselves to death,  
 Ere I could make thee open thy white hand,  
 And clap thyself my love ; then didst thou utter,  
*I am yours for ever.*

*Her.* It is Grace, indeed.—

Why, lo you now, I have spoke to th' purpose twice :  
 The one for ever earn'd a royal husband ;  
 The other, for some while a friend.

[Giving her hand to POLIXENES.

*Leon.* Too hot, too hot: [*Aside.*

To mingle friendship far, is mingling bloods.  
 I have *tremor cordis* on me :—my heart dances ;  
 But not for joy,—not joy.—This entertainment  
 May a free face put on ; derive a liberty  
 From heartiness, from bounty, fertile bosom,  
 And well become the agent: it may, I grant:  
 But to be paddling palms, and pinching fingers,  
 As now they are; and making practis'd smiles,  
 As in a looking-glass;—and then to sigh, as 'twere  
 The mort o' th' deer; O, that is entertainment  
 My bosom likes not, nor my brows.—Mamillius,  
 Art thou my boy?

*Mam.* Ay, my good lord.

*Leon.* I fecks?

Why, that's my bawcock. What, hast smutch'd thy  
 nose?—

They say, it's a copy out of mine. Come, captain,  
 We must be neat; not neat, but cleanly, captain:  
 And yet the steer, the heifer, and the calf,  
 Are all call'd, neat.—Still virginalling

[Observing POLIXENES and HERMIONE.

Upon his palm?—How now, you wanton calf?  
 Art thou my calf?

*Mam.* Yes, if you will, my lord.

*Leon.* Thou want'st a rough pash, and the shoots  
 that I have,

To be full like me :—yet, they say, we are  
 Almost as like as eggs; women say so,

That I'll say any thing: But were they false  
 As o'er-died blacks, as wind, as waters; false  
 As dice are to be wish'd, by one that fixes  
 No bourn 'twixt his and mine; yet were it true  
 To say this boy were like me.—Come, sir page,  
 Look on me with your welkin eye: Sweet villain!  
 Most dear'st! my collop!—Can thy dam?—may't be?  
 Affection! thy intention stabs the center:  
 Thou dost make possible, things not so-held,  
 Communicat'st with dreams;—(How can this be?)—  
 With what's unreal thou coactive art,  
 And fellow'st nothing: Then, 'tis very credent,  
 Thou may'st co-join with something; and thou  
 dost;

(And that beyond commission; and I find it,)  
 And that to the infection of my brains,  
 And hardening of my brows.

*Pol.* What means Sicilia?

*Her.* He something seems unsettled.

*Pol.* How, my lord?

What cheer; how is't with you, best brother?

*Her.* You look,

As if you held a brow of much distraction:

Are you mov'd, my lord?

*Leon.* No, in good earnest.—

How sometimes nature will betray its folly,  
 Its tenderness, and make itself a pastime  
 To harder bosoms! Looking on the lines  
 Of my boy's face, methoughts, I did recoil  
 Twenty-three years; and saw myself unbreech'd,  
 In my green velvet coat; my dagger muzzled,  
 Lest it should bite its master, and so prove,  
 As ornaments oft do, too dangerous.

How like, methought, I then was to this kernel,  
This squash, this gentleman:—Mine honest friend,  
Will you take eggs for money?

*Mam.* No, my lord, I'll fight.

*Leon.* You will? why, happy man be's dole!—My  
brother,

Are you so fond of your young prince, as we  
Do seem to be of ours?

*Pol.* If at home, sir,

He's all my exercise, my mirth, my matter:  
Now my sworn friend, and then mine enemy;  
My parasite, my soldier, statesman, all:  
He makes a July's day short as December;  
And, with his varying childness cures, in me  
Thoughts that would thicken my blood.

*Leon.* So stands this squire  
Offic'd with me: We two will walk, my lord,  
And leave you to your graver steps.—Hermione,  
How thou lov'st us, show in our brother's welcome;  
Let what is dear in Sicily, be cheap:  
Next to thyself, and my young rover, he's  
Apparent to my heart.

*Her.* If you would seek us,  
We are yours i' th' garden: Shall's attend you there?

*Leon.* To your own bents dispose you: you'll be  
found,

Be you beneath the sky:—I am angling now,  
Though you perceive me not how I give line.  
Go to, go to!

[*Aside.* Observing POLIXENES and HERMIONE.  
How she holds up the net, the bill to him!  
And arms her with the boldness of a wife  
To her allowing husband! Gone already;

Inch-thick, knee-deep; o'er head and ears a fork'd  
one.—

[*Exeunt* POLIXENES, HERMIONE, and *Attendants*.

Go, play, boy, play;—thy mother plays, and I  
Play too; but so disgrac'd a part, whose issue  
Will hiss me to my grave; contempt and clamour  
Will be my knell.—Go, play, boy, play;—There have  
been,

Or I am much deceiv'd, cuckolds ere now;  
And many a man there is, even at this present,  
Now, while I speak this, holds his wife by th' arm,  
That little thinks she has been sluic'd in's absence,  
And his pond fish'd by his next neighbour, by  
Sir Smile, his neighbour: nay, there's comfort in't,  
Whiles other men have gates; and those gates  
open'd,

As mine, against their will: Should all despair,  
That have revolted wives, the tenth of mankind  
Would hang themselves. Physick for't there is none;  
It is a bawdy planet, that will strike  
Where 'tis predominant; and 'tis powerful, think it,  
From east, west, north, and south: Be it concluded,  
No barricado for a belly; know it;  
It will let in and out the enemy,  
With bag and baggage: many a thousand of us  
Have the disease, and feel't not.—How now, boy?

*Mam.* I am like you, they say.

*Leon.* Why, that's some comfort.—

What! Camillo there?

*Cam.* Ay, my good lord.

*Leon.* Go play, Mamillius; thou'rt an honest man.—

[*Erit* MAMILLIUS.]

Camillo, this great sir will yet stay longer.

*Cam.* You had much ado to make his anchor hold :  
When you cast out, it still came home.

*Leon.* Didst note it ?

*Cam.* He would not stay at your petitions ; made  
His business more material.

*Leon.* Didst perceive it?—  
They're here with me already ; whispering, rounding,  
*Sicilia is a so-forth* : 'Tis far gone,  
When I shall gust it last.—How came't, Camillo,  
That he did stay ?

*Cam.* At the good queen's entreaty.

*Leon.* At the queen's, be't : good, should be perti-  
nent ;

But so it is, it is not. Was this taken  
By any understanding pate but thine ?  
For thy conceit is soaking, will draw in  
More than the common blocks :—Not noted, is't,  
But of the finer natures ? by some severals,  
Of head-piece extraordinary ? lower messes,  
Perchance, are to this business purblind : say.

*Cam.* Business, my lord ? I think, most understand  
Bohemia stays here longer.

*Leon.* Ha ?

*Cam.* Stays here longer.

*Leon.* Ay, but why ?

*Cam.* To satisfy your highness, and the entreaties  
Of our most gracious mistress.

*Leon.* Satisfy  
The entreaties of your mistress :—satisfy ?—  
Let that suffice. I have trusted thee, Camillo,  
With all the nearest things to my heart, as well  
My chamber-councils : wherein, priest-like, thou  
Hast cleans'd my bosom ; I from thee departed

Thy penitent reform'd: but we have been  
Deceiv'd in thy integrity, deceiv'd  
In that which seems so.

*Cam.* Be it forbid, my lord!

*Leon.* To bide upon't;—Thou art not honest: or,  
If thou inclin'st that way, thou art a coward;  
Which hoxes honesty behind, restraining  
From course requir'd: Or else thou must be counted  
A servant, grafted in my serious trust,  
And therein negligent; or else a fool,  
That seest a game play'd home, the rich stake drawn,  
And tak'st it all for jest.

*Cam.* My gracious lord,  
I may be negligent, foolish, and fearful;  
In every one of these no man is free,  
But that his negligence, his folly, fear,  
Amongst the infinite doings of the world,  
Sometime puts forth: In your affairs, my lord,  
If ever I were wilful-negligent,  
It was my folly; if industriously  
I play'd the fool, it was my negligence,  
Not weighing well the end; if ever fearful  
To do a thing, where I the issue doubted,  
Whereof the execution did cry out  
Against the non-performance, 'twas a fear  
Which oft affects the wisest: these, my lord,  
Are such allow'd infirmities, that honesty  
Is never free of. But, 'beseech your grace,  
Be plainer with me; let me know my trespass  
By its own visage: if I then deny it,  
'Tis none of mine.

*Leon.* Have not you seen, Camillo,  
(But that's past doubt: you have; or your eye-glass

Is thicker than a cuckold's horn;) or heard,  
 (For, to a vision so apparent, rumour  
 Cannot be mute,) or thought, (for cogitation  
 Resides not in that man, that does not think it,)  
 My wife is slippery? If thou wilt confess,  
 (Or else be impudently negative,  
 To have nor eyes, nor ears, nor thought,) then say,  
 My wife's a hobbyhorse; deserves a name  
 As rank as any flax-wench, that puts to  
 Before her troth-plaint: say it, and justify it.

*Cam.* I would not be a stander-by, to hear  
 My sovereign mistress clouded so, without  
 My present vengeance taken: 'Shrew my heart,  
 You never spoke what did become you less  
 Than this; which to reiterate, were sin  
 As deep as that, though true.

*Leon.* Is whispering nothing?  
 Is leaning cheek to cheek? is meeting noses?  
 Kissing with inside lip? stopping the career  
 Of laughter with a sigh? (a note infallible  
 Of breaking honesty:) horsing foot on foot?  
 Skulking in corners? wishing clocks more swift?  
 Hours, minutes? noon, midnight? and all eyes blind  
 With the pin and web, but theirs, theirs only,  
 That would unseen be wicked? is this nothing?  
 Why, then the world, and all that's in't, is nothing;  
 The covering sky is nothing; Bohemia nothing;  
 My wife is nothing; nor nothing have these nothings,  
 If this be nothing.

*Cam.* Good my lord, be cur'd  
 Of this diseas'd opinion, and betimes;  
 For 'tis most dangerous.

*Leon.* Say, it be; 'tis true.



*Cam.* No, no, my lord.

*Leon.* It is; you lie, you lie:  
I say, thou liest, Camillo, and I hate thee;  
Pronounce thee a gross lout, a mindless slave;  
Or else a hovering temporizer, that  
Canst with thine eyes at once see good and evil,  
Inclining to them both: Were my wife's liver  
Infected as her life, she would not live  
The running of one glass.

*Cam.* Who does infect her?

*Leon.* Why he, that wears her like her medal, hanging  
About his neck, Bohemia: Who—if I  
Had servants true about me: that bare eyes  
To see alike mine honour as their profits,  
Their own particular thrifts,—they would do that  
Which should undo more doing: Ay, and thou,  
His cup-bearer,—whom I from meaner form  
Have bench'd, and rear'd to worship; who may'st see  
Plainly, as heaven sees earth, and earth sees heaven,  
How I am galled,—might'st bespice a cup,  
To give mine enemy a lasting wink;  
Which draught to me were cordial.

*Cam.* Sir, my lord,

I could do this; and that with no rash potion,  
But with a ling'ring dram, that should not work  
Maliciously like poison: But I cannot  
Believe this crack to be in my dread mistress,  
So sovereignly being honourable.  
I have lov'd thee,——

*Leon.* Make't thy question, and go rot!

Dost think, I am so muddy, so unsettled,  
To appoint myself in this vexation? sully  
The purity and whiteness of my sheets,

Which to preserve, is sleep; which being spotted,  
Is goads, thorns, nettles, tails of wasps?  
Give scandal to the blood o' th' prince my son,  
Who, I do think is mine, and love as mine;  
Without ripe moving to't? Would I do this?  
Could man so blench?

*Cam.* I must believe you, sir;  
I do; and will fetch off Bohemia for't:  
Provided, that when he's remov'd, your highness  
Will take again your queen, as yours at first;  
Even for your son's sake; and, thereby, for sealing  
The injury of tongues, in courts and kingdoms  
Known and allied to yours.

*Leon.* Thou dost advise me,  
Even so as I my own course have set down:  
I'll give no blemish to her honour, none.

*Cam.* My lord,  
Go then; and with a countenance as clear  
As friendship wears at feasts, keep with Bohemia,  
And with your queen: I am his cupbearer;  
If from me he have wholesome beverage,  
Account me not your servant.

*Leon.* This is all:  
Do't, and thou hast the one half of my heart;  
Do't not, thou split'st thine own.

*Cam.* I'll do't, my lord.

*Leon.* I will seem friendly, as thou hast advis'd me.

[*Exit.*]

*Cam.* O miserable lady!—But, for me,  
What case stand I in? I must be the poisoner  
Of good Polixenes: and my ground to do't  
Is the obedience to a master; one,  
Who, in rebellion with himself, will have

All that are his, so too.—To do this deed,  
 Promotion follows : If I could find example  
 Of thousands, that had struck anointed kings,  
 And flourish'd after, I'd not do't : but since  
 Nor brass, nor stone, nor parchment, bears not one,  
 Let villainy itself forswear't. I must  
 Forsake the court : to do't, or no, is certain  
 To me a break-neck. Happy star, reign now !  
 Here comes Bohemia.

*Enter POLIXENES.*

*Pol.* This is strange ! methinks,  
 My favour here begins to warp. Not speak?—  
 Good-day, Camillo.

*Cam.* Hail, most royal sir !

*Pol.* What is the news i' th' court ?

*Cam.* None rare, my lord.

*Pol.* The king hath on him such a countenance,  
 As he had lost some province, and a region,  
 Lov'd as he loves himself : even now I met him  
 With customary compliment ; when he,  
 Wafting his eyes to th' contrary, and falling  
 A lip of much contempt, speeds from me ; and  
 So leaves me, to consider what is breeding,  
 That changes thus his manners.

*Cam.* I dare not know, my lord.

*Pol.* How ! dare not ? do not. Do you know, and  
 dare not

Be intelligent to me ? 'Tis thereabouts ;  
 For, to yourself, what you do know, you must ;  
 And cannot say, you dare not. Good Camillo,  
 Your chang'd complexions are to me a mirror,

Which shows me mine chang'd too: for I must be.  
 A party in this alteration, finding  
 Myself thus alter'd with it.

*Cam.* There is a sickness  
 Which puts some of us in distemper; but  
 I cannot name the disease; and it is caught  
 Of you that yet are well.

*Pol.* How! caught of me?  
 Make me not sighted like the basilisk:  
 I have look'd on thousands, who have sped the better  
 By my regard, but kill'd none so. Camillo,—  
 As you are certainly a gentleman; thereto  
 Clerk-like, experienc'd, which no less adorns  
 Our gentry, than our parents' noble names,  
 In whose success we are gentle,—I beseech you,  
 If you know aught which does behove my knowledge  
 Thereof to be inform'd, imprison it not  
 In ignorant concealment.

*Cam.* I may not answer.

*Pol.* A sickness caught of me, and yet I well!  
 I must be answer'd.—Dost thou hear, Camillo,  
 I conjure thee, by all the parts of man,  
 Which honour does acknowledge,—whereof the least  
 Is not this suit of mine,—that thou declare  
 What incidency thou dost guess of harm  
 Is creeping toward me; how far off, how near;  
 Which way to be prevented, if to be;  
 If not, how best to bear it.

*Cam.* Sir, I'll tell you;  
 Since I am charg'd in honour, and by him  
 That I think honourable: Therefore, mark my counsel;  
 Which must be even as swiftly follow'd, as

I mean to utter it ; or both yourself and me  
Cry, *lost*, and so good-night.

*Pol.* On, good Camillo.

*Cam.* I am appointed Him to murder you.

*Pol.* By whom, Camillo ?

*Cam.* By the king.

*Pol.* For what ?

*Cam.* He thinks, nay, with all confidence he swears,  
As he had seen't, or been an instrument  
To vice you to't,—that you have touch'd his queen  
Forbiddenly.

*Pol.* O, then my best blood turn  
To an infected jelly ; and my name  
Be yok'd with his, that did betray the best !  
Turn then my freshest reputation to  
A savour, that may strike the dullest nostril  
Where I arrive ; and my approach be shunn'd,  
Nay, hated too, worse than the great'st infection  
That e'er was heard, or read !

*Cam.* Swear his thought over  
By each particular star in heaven, and  
By all their influences, you may as well  
Forbid the sea for to obey the moon,  
As or, by oath, remove, or counsel, shake,  
The fabrick of his folly ; whose foundation  
Is pil'd upon his faith, and will continue  
The standing of his body.

*Pol.* How should this grow ?

*Cam.* I know not : but, I am sure, 'tis safer to  
Avoid what's grown, than question how 'tis born.  
If therefore you dare trust my honesty,—  
That lies enclosed in this trunk, which you

Shall bear along impawn'd,—away to-night.  
 Your followers I will whisper to the business ;  
 And will, by twos, and threes, at several posterns,  
 Clear them o' th' city : For myself, I'll put  
 My fortunes to your service, which are here  
 By this discovery lost. Be not uncertain ;  
 For, by the honour of my parents, I  
 Have utter'd truth : which if you seek to prove,  
 I dare not stand by ; nor shall you be safer  
 Than one condemn'd by the king's own mouth, thereon  
 His execution sworn.

*Pol.* I do believe thee :  
 I saw his heart in's face. Give me thy hand ;  
 Be pilot to me, and thy places shall  
 Still neighbour mine : My ships are ready, and  
 My people did expect my hence departure  
 Two days ago.—This jealousy  
 Is for a precious creature : as she's rare,  
 Must it be great ; and, as his person's mighty,  
 Must it be violent ; and as he does conceive  
 He is dishonour'd by a man which ever  
 Profess'd to him, why, his revenges must  
 In that be made more bitter. Fear o'er shades me :  
 Good expedition be my friend, and comfort  
 The gracious queen, part of his theme, but nothing  
 Of his ill-ta'en suspicion ! Come, Camillo ;  
 I will respect thee as a father, if  
 Thou bear'st my life off hence : Let us avoid.

*Cam.* It is in mine authority, to command  
 The keys of all the posterns : Please your highness  
 To take the urgent hour : come, sir, away. [*Exeunt*

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*The same.*

*Enter HERMIONE, MAMILLIUS, and Ladies.*

*Her.* Take the boy to you : he so troubles me,  
'Tis past enduring.

*1 Lady.* Come, my gracious lord.  
Shall I be your play-fellow ?

*Mam.* No, I'll none of you.

*1 Lady.* Why, my sweet lord ?

*Mam.* You'll kiss me hard ; and speak to me as if  
I were a baby still.—I love you better.

*2 Lady.* And why so, my good lord ?

*Mam.* Not for because

Your brows are blacker ; yet black brows, they say,  
Become some women best ; so that there be not  
Too much hair there, but in a semi-circle,  
Or half-moon made with a pen.

*2 Lady.* Who taught you this ?

*Mam.* I learn'd it out of women's faces.—Pray now  
What colour are your eye-brows ?

*1 Lady.* Blue, my lord.

*Mam.* Nay, that's a mock : I have seen a lady's nose  
That has been blue, but not her eye-brows.

*2 Lady.* Hark ye :

The queen, your mother, rounds apace : we shall  
Present our services to a fine new prince,  
One of these days ; and then you'd wanton with us  
If we would have you.

*I Lady.* She is spread of late  
 Into a goodly bulk: Good time encounter her!

*Her.* What wisdom stirs amongst you? Come, sir,  
 now

I am for you again: Pray you, sit by us,  
 And tell 's a tale.

*Mam.* Merry, or sad, shall't be?

*Her.* As merry as you will.

*Mam.* A sad tale's best for winter:  
 I have one of sprites and goblins.

*Her.* Let's have that, sir.  
 Come on, sit down:—Come on, and do your best  
 To fright me with your sprites: you're powerful at it.

*Mam.* There was a man,——

*Her.* Nay, come, sit down; then on.

*Mam.* Dwelt by a church-yard;—I will tell it softly;  
 Yon crickets shall not hear it.

*Her.* Come on then,  
 And give't me in mine ear.

*Enter LEONTES, ANTIGONUS, Lords, and others.*

*Leon.* Was he met there? his train? Camillo with  
 him?

*I Lord.* Behind the tuft of pines I met them; never  
 Saw I men scour so on their way: I ey'd them  
 Even to their ships.

*Leon.* How bless'd am I  
 In my just censure? in my true opinion?—  
 Alack, for lesser knowledge!—How accurs'd,  
 In being so blest!—There may be in the cup  
 A spider steep'd, and one may drink; depart,  
 And yet partake no venom; for his knowledge  
 Is not infected: but if one present



Th' abhorr'd ingredient to his eye, make known  
 How he hath drank, he cracks his gorge, his sides,  
 With violent hefts:—I have drank, and seen the spider.  
 Camillo was his help in this, his pander:—  
 There is a plot against my life, my crown;  
 All's true that is mistrusted:—that false villain,  
 Whom I employ'd, was pre-employ'd by him:  
 He has discover'd my design, and I  
 Remain a pinch'd thing; yea, a very trick  
 For them to play at will:—How came the posterns  
 So easily open?

I *Lord.* By his great authority;  
 Which often hath no less prevail'd than so,  
 On your command.

*Leon.* I know't too well.—  
 Give me the boy; I am glad, you did not nurse him:  
 Though he does bear some signs of me, yet you  
 Have too much blood in him.

*Her.* What is this? sport?

*Leon.* Bear the boy hence, he shall not come about  
 her;

Away with him:—and let her sport herself  
 With that she's big with; for 'tis Polixenes  
 Has made thee swell thus.

*Her.* But I'd say, he had not,  
 And, I'll be sworn, you would believe my saying,  
 Howe'er you lean to th' nayward.

*Leon.* You, my lords,  
 Look on her, mark her well; be but about  
 To say, *she is a goodly lady*, and  
 The justice of your hearts will thereto add,  
 'Tis *pity she's not honest, honourable*:  
 Praise her but for this her without-door form,

(Which, on my faith, deserves high speech,) and straight

The shrug, the hum, or ha; these petty brands,  
That calumny doth use:—O, I am out,  
That mercy does; for calumny will sear  
Virtue itself:—these shrugs, these hums, and ha's,  
When you have said, she's goodly, come between,  
Ere you can say she's honest: But be it known,  
From him that has most cause to grieve it should be,  
She's an adultruss.

*Her.* Should a villain say so,  
The most replenish'd villain in the world,  
He were as much more villain: you, my lord,  
Do but mistake.

*Leon.* You have mistook, my lady,  
Polixenes for Leontes: O thou thing,  
Which I'll not call a creature of thy place,  
Lest barbarism, making me the precedent,  
Should a like language use to all degrees,  
And mannerly distinguishment leave out  
Betwixt the prince and beggar!—I have said,  
She's an adultruss; I have said with whom:  
More, she's a traitor; and Camillo is  
A federary with her; and one that knows  
What she should shame to know herself,  
But with her most vile principal, that she's  
A bed-swerger, even as bad as those  
That vulgars give bold titles; ay, and privy  
To this their late escape.

*Her.* No, by my life,  
Privy to none of this: How will this grieve you,  
When you shall come to clearer knowledge, that  
You thus have publish'd me? Gentle my lord,

You scarce can right me throughly then, to say  
You did mistake.

*Leon.* No, no; if I mistake  
In those foundations which I build upon,  
The center is not big enough to bear  
A school-boy's top.—Away with her to prison:  
He, who shall speak for her, is afar off guilty,  
But that he speaks.

*Her.* There's some ill planet reigns:  
I must be patient, till the heavens look  
With an aspect more favourable.—Good my lords,  
I am not prone to weeping, as our sex  
Commonly are; the want of which vain dew,  
Perchance, shall dry your pities: but I have  
That honourable grief lodg'd here, which burns  
Worse than tears drown: 'Beseech you all, my lords,  
With thoughts so qualified as your charities  
Shall best instruct you, measure me;—and so  
The king's will be perform'd!

*Leon.*

Shall I be heard?

[*To the Guards.*]

*Her.* Who is't, that goes with me?—'Beseech your  
highness,  
My women may be with me; for, you see,  
My plight requires it. Do not weep, good fools;  
There is no cause: when you shall know, your mistress  
Has deserv'd prison, then abound in tears,  
As I come out: this action, I now go on,  
Is for my better grace.—Adieu, my lord:  
I never wish'd to see you sorry; now,  
I trust, I shall.—My women, come; you have leave.

*Leon.* Go, do our bidding; hence.

[*Exeunt Queen and Ladies*]

1 *Lord.* 'Beseech your highness, call the queen again.

*Ant.* Be certain what you do, sir; lest your justice Prove violence; in the which three great ones suffer, Yourself, your queen, your son.

1 *Lord.* For her, my lord,—  
I dare my life lay down, and will do't, sir,  
Please you t' accept it, that the queen is spotless  
I th' eyes of heaven, and to you; I mean,  
In this which you accuse her.

*Ant.* If it prove  
She's otherwise, I'll keep my stables where  
I lodge my wife; I'll go in couples with her;  
Than when I feel, and see her, no further trust her;  
For every inch of woman in the world,  
Ay, every dram of woman's flesh, is false,  
If she be.

*Leon.* Hold your peaces.

1 *Lord.* Good my lord,—

*Ant.* It is for you we speak, not for ourselves:  
You are abus'd, and by some putter-on,  
That will be damn'd for't; 'would I knew the villain,  
I would land-damn him: Be she honour-flaw'd,—  
I have three daughters; the eldest is eleven;  
The second, and the third, nine, and some five;  
If this prove true, they'll pay for't: by mine honour,  
I'll geld them all; fourteen they shall not see,  
To bring false generations: they are co-heirs;  
And I had rather glib myself, than they  
Should not produce fair issue.

*Leon.* Cease; no more.

You smell this business with a sense as cold  
As is a dead man's nose: I see't, and feel't,

As you feel doing thus; and see withal  
The instruments that feel.

*Ant.* If it be so,

We need no grave to bury honesty;  
There's not a grain of it, the face to sweeten  
Of the whole dungy earth.

*Leon.* What! lack I credit?

*1 Lord.* I had rather you did lack, than I, my  
lord,

Upon this ground: and more it would content me  
To have her honour true, than your suspicion;  
Be blam'd for't how you might.

*Leon.* Why, what need we

Commune with you of this? but rather follow  
Our forceful instigation? Our prerogative  
Calls not your counsels; but our natural goodness  
Imparts this: which,—if you (or stupified,  
Or seeming so in skill,) cannot, or will not,  
Relish as truth, like us; inform yourselves,  
We need no more of your advice: the matter,  
The loss, the gain, the ordering on't, is all  
Properly ours.

*Ant.* And I wish, my liege,

You had only in your silent judgement tried it,  
Without more overture.

*Leon.* How could that be?

Either thou art most ignorant by age,  
Or thou wert born a fool. Camillo's flight,  
Added to their familiarity,  
(Which was as gross as ever touch'd conjecture,  
That lack'd sight only, nought for approbation,  
But only seeing, all other circumstances  
Made up to the deed,) doth push on this proceeding:

Yet, for a greater confirmation,  
 (For, in an act of this importance, 'twere  
 Most piteous to be wild,) I have despatch'd in post,  
 To sacred Delphos, to Apollo's temple,  
 Cleomenes and Dion, whom you know  
 Of stuff'd sufficiency: Now, from the oracle  
 They will bring all; whose spiritual counsel had,  
 Shall stop, or spur me. Have I done well?

1 *Lord*. Well done, my lord.

*Leon*. Though I am satisfied, and need no more  
 Than what I know, yet shall the oracle  
 Give rest to th' minds of others; such as he,  
 Whose ignorant credulity will not  
 Come up to th' truth: So have we thought it good,  
 From our free person she should be confin'd;  
 Last that the treachery of the two, fled hence,  
 Be left her to perform. Come, follow us;  
 We are to speak in publick: for this business  
 Will raise us all.

*Ant*. [*Aside*.] To laughter, as I take it,  
 If the good truth were known. [*Exeunt*.]

SCENE II.—*The same*. *The outer room of a prison*.

*Enter PAULINA and Attendants*.

*Paul*. The keeper of the prison,— call to him;  
 [*Exit an Attendant*.]

Let him have knowledge who I am.—Good lady!  
 No court in Europe is too good for thee,  
 What dost thou then in prison?—Now, good sir,

*Re-enter Attendant, with the Keeper*.

You know me, do you not?

*Keep.* For a worthy lady,  
And one whom much I honour.

*Paul.* Pray you then.  
Conduct me to the queen.

*Keep.* I may not, madam; to the contrary  
I have express commandment.

*Paul.* Here's ado,  
To lock up honesty and honour from  
Th' access of gentle visitors!—Is it lawful,  
Pray you, to see her women? any of them?  
*Emilia?*

*Keep.* So please you, madam, to put  
Apart these your attendants, I shall bring  
*Emilia* forth.

*Paul.* I pray now, call her.  
Withdraw yourselves. [*Exeunt* Attend.

*Keep.* And, madam,  
I must be present at your conference.

*Paul.* Well, be it so, pr'ythee. [*Exit* Keeper.]  
Here's such ado to make no stain a stain,  
As passes colouring.

*Re-enter* Keeper, with *EMILIA*.

Dear gentlewoman, how fares our gracious lady?

*Emil.* As well as one so great, and so forlorn,  
May hold together: On her frights, and griefs,  
(Which never-tender lady hath borne greater,)  
She is, something before her time, deliver'd.

*Paul.* A boy?

*Emil.* A daughter; and a goodly babe,  
Lusty, and like to live: the queen receives  
Much comfort in't: says, *My poor prisoner,*  
*I am innocent as you.*

*Paul.* I dare be sworn:—  
These dangerous unsafe lunes o' th' king! beshrew  
them!

He must be told on't, and he shall: the office  
Becomes a woman best; I'll take't upon me:  
If I prove honey-mouth'd, let my tongue blister;  
And never to my red-look'd anger be  
The trumpet any more:—Pray you, Emilia,  
Commend my best obedience to the queen;  
If she dares trust me with her little babe,  
I'll show't the king, and undertake to be  
Her advocate to th' loudest: We do not know  
How he may soften at the sight o' th' child;  
The silence often of pure innocence  
Persuades, when speaking fails.

*Emil.* Most worthy madam,  
Your honour, and your goodness, is so evident,  
That your free undertaking cannot miss  
A thriving issue; there is no lady living,  
So meet for this great errand: Please your ladyship  
To visit the next room, I'll presently  
Acquaint the queen of your most noble offer;  
Who, but to-day, hammer'd of this design;  
But durst not tempt a minister of honour,  
Lest she should be denied.

*Paul.* Tell her, Emilia,  
I'll use that tongue I have: if wit flow from it,  
As boldness from my bosom, let it not be doubted  
I shall do good.

*Emil.* Now be you blest for it!  
I'll to the queen: Please you, come something nearer  
*Keep.* Madam, if't please the queen to send the  
babe,



I know not what I shall incur, to pass it,  
Having no warrant.

*Paul.* You need not fear it, sir:  
The child was prisoner to the womb; and is,  
By law and process of great nature, thence  
Free'd and enfranchis'd: not a party to  
The anger of the king; nor guilty of,  
If any be, the trespass of the queen.

*Keep.* I do believe it.

*Paul.* Do not you fear: upon  
Mine honour, I will stand 'twixt you and danger.

[*Exeun.*]

SCENE III.—*The same. A room in the palace.*

*Enter LEONTES, ANTIGONUS, Lords, and other Attendants.*

*Leon.* Nor night, nor day, no rest: It is but weak-  
ness

To bear the matter thus; mere weakness, if  
The cause were not in being;—part o' th' cause,  
She, the adultress;—for the harlot king  
Is quite beyond mine arm, out of the blank  
And level of my brain, plot-proof: but she  
I can hook to me: Say, that she were gone,  
Given to the fire, a moiety of my rest!  
Might come to me again.—Who's there?

*1 Atten.*

My lord?

[*Advancing.*]

*Leon.* How does the boy?

*1 Atten.*

He took good rest to-night;

'Tis hop'd, his sickness is discharg'd.

*Leon.*

To see,

His nobleness!

Conceiving the dishonour of his mother,  
He straight declin'd, droop'd, took it deeply;  
Fasten'd and fix'd the shame on't in himself;  
Threw off his spirit, his appetite, his sleep,  
And downright languish'd.—Leave me solely:—go,  
See how he fares. [*Exit Attend.*].—Fye, fye! no thought  
of him;—

The very thought of my revenges that way  
Recoil upon me: in himself too mighty;  
And in his parties, his alliance,—Let him be,  
Until a time may serve: for present vengeance,  
Take it on her. Camillo and Polixenes  
Laugh at me; make their pastime at my sorrow:  
They should not laugh, if I could reach them; nor  
Shall she, within my power.

*Enter PAULINA, with a Child.*

1 *Lord.*

You must not enter.

*Paul.* Nay, rather, good my lords, be second to me:  
Fear you his tyrannous passion more, alas,  
Than the queen's life? a gracious innocent soul;  
More free, than he is jealous.

*Ant.*

That's enough.

1 *Atten.* Madam, he hath not slept to-night; com-  
manded

None should come at him.

*Paul.*

Not so hot, good sir;

I come to bring him sleep. 'Tis such as you,—  
That creep like shadows by him, and do sigh  
At each his needless heavings,—such as you  
Nourish the cause of his awaking: I

Do come with words as med'cinal as true;  
 Honest, as either; to purge him of that humour.  
 That presses him from sleep.

*Leon.* What noise there, ho?

*Paul.* No noise, my lord; but needful conference,  
 About some gossips for your highness.

*Leon.* How?—

Away with that audacious lady: Antigonus,  
 I charg'd thee, that she should not come about me;  
 I knew, she would.

*Ant.* I told her so, my lord,  
 On your displeasure's peril, and on mine,  
 She should not visit you.

*Leon.* What, canst not rule her?

*Paul.* From all dishonesty, he can: in this,  
 (Unless he take the course that you have done,  
 Commit me, for committing honour,) trust it,  
 He shall not rule me.

*Ant.* Lo you now; you hear!  
 When she will take the rein, I let her run;  
 But she'll not stumble.

*Paul.* Good my liege, I come,—  
 And, I beseech you, hear me, who profess  
 Myself your loyal servant, your physician,  
 Your most obedient counsellor; yet that dare  
 Less appear so, in comforting your evils,  
 Than such as most seem yours:—I say, I come  
 From your good queen.

*Leon.* Good queen!

*Paul.* Good queen, my lord, good queen: I say, good  
 queen;  
 And would by combat make her good, so were I  
 A man, the worst about you.

*Leon.* Force her hence.

*Paul.* Let him, that makes but trifles of his eyes,  
First hand me: on mine own accord, I'll off;  
But, first, I'll do my errand.—The good queen,  
For she is good, hath brought you forth a daughter;  
Here 'tis; commends it to your blessing.

[Laying down the child.

*Leon.* Out!

A mankind witch! Hence with her, out o'door:  
A most intelligencing bawd!

*Paul.* Not so:

I am as ignorant in that, as you  
In so entitling me: and no less honest  
Than you are mad; which is enough, I'll warrant,  
As this world goes, to pass for honest.

*Leon.* Traitors!

Will you not push her out? Give her the bastard:—  
Thou, dotard, [To ANTIGONUS.] thou art woman-tir'd,  
unroosted

By thy dame Partlet here,—take up the bastard;  
Take't up, I say; giv't to thy crone.

*Paul.* For ever

Unvenerable be thy hands, if thou  
Tak'st up the princess, by that forced baseness  
Which he has put upon't.

*Leon.* He dreads his wife.

*Paul.* So, I would, you did; then, 'twere past all  
doubt,  
You'd call your children yours.

*Leon.* A nest of traitors!

*Ant.* I am none, by this good light.

*Paul.* Nor I; nor any,

But one, that's here; and that's himself: for he

The sacred honour of himself, his queen's,  
His hopeful son's, his babe's, betrays to slander,  
Whose sting is sharper than the sword's; and will  
not

(For, as the case now stands, it is a curse  
He cannot be compell'd to't,) once remove  
The root of his opinion, which is rotten,  
As ever oak, or stone, was sound.

*Leon.*

*A callat,*

Of boundless tongue; who late hath beat her husband,  
And now baits me!—This brat is none of mine;  
It is the issue of Polixenes:  
Hence with it; and, together with the dam,  
Commit them to the fire.

*Paul.*

*It is yours;*

And, might we lay th'old proverb to your charge,  
So like you, 'tis the worse.—Behold, my lords,  
Although the print be little, the whole matter  
And copy of the father: eye, nose, lip,  
The trick of his frown, his forehead; nay, the valley,  
The pretty dimples of his chin, and cheek; his smiles;  
The very mould and frame of hand, nail, finger:—  
And, thou, good goddess nature, which hast made it  
So like to him that got it, if thou hast  
The ordering of the mind too, 'mongst all colours  
No yellow in't; lest she suspect, as he does,  
Her children not her husband's!

*Leon.*

*A gross hag!—*

And, lozel, thou art worthy to be hang'd,  
That wilt not stay her tongue.

*Ant.*

*Hang all the husbands,*

That cannot do that feat, you'll leave yourself  
Hardly one subject.

*Leon.* Once more, take her hence.

*Paul.* A most unworthy and unnatural lord  
Can do no more.

*Leon.* I'll have thee burn'd.

*Paul.* I care not:

It is an heretick, that makes the fire,  
Not she, which burns in't. I'll not call you tyrant,  
But this most cruel usage of your queen  
(Not able to produce more accusation  
Than your own weak-hing'd fancy,) something sa-  
vours

Of tyranny, and will ignoble make you,  
Yea, scandalous to the world.

*Leon.* On your allegiance,  
Out of the chamber with her. Were I a tyrant,  
Where were her life? she durst not call me so,  
If she did know me one. Away with her.

*Paul.* I pray you, do not push me; I'll be gone.  
Look to your babe, my lord; 'tis yours: Jove send her  
A better guiding spirit!—What need these hands?—  
You, that are thus so tender o'er his follies,  
Will never do him good, not one of you.  
So, so:—Farewell; we are gone. [Exit.

*Leon.* Thou, traitor, hast set on thy wife to this.—  
My child? away with't!—even thou, that hast  
A heart so tender o'er it, take it hence,  
And see it instantly consum'd with fire;  
Even thou, and none but thou. Take it up straight:  
Within this hour bring me word 'tis done,  
(And by good testimony,) or I'll seize thy life,  
With what thou else call'st thine: If thou refuse,  
And wilt encounter with my wrath, say so;  
The bastard brains with these my proper hands

Shall I dash out. Go, take it to the fire;  
For thou sett'st on thy wife.

*Ant.* I did not, sir:  
These lords, my noble fellows, if they please,  
Can clear me in't.

*1 Lord.* We can; my royal liege,  
He is not guilty of her coming hither.

*Leon.* You are liars all.

*1 Lord.* Beseech your highness, give us better credit;  
We have always truly serv'd you; and beseech  
So to esteem of us: And on our knees we beg,  
(As recompense of our dear services,  
Past, and to come,) that you do change this purpose;  
Which, being so horrible, so bloody, must  
Lead on to some foul issue: We all kneel.

*Leon.* I am a feather for each wind that blows:—  
Shall I live on, to see this bastard kneel  
And call me father? Better burn it now,  
Than curse it then. But, be it; let it live:  
It shall not neither.—You, sir, come you hither;

[To ANTIGONUS

You, that have been so tenderly officious  
With lady Margery, your midwife, there,  
To save this bastard's life:—for 'tis a bastard,  
So sure as this beard's grey,—what will you adventure  
To save this brat's life?

*Ant.* Any thing, my lord,  
That my ability may undergo,  
And nobleness impose: at least, thus much;  
I'll pawn the little blood which I have left,  
To save the innocent: any thing possible.

*Leon.* It shall be possible: Swear by this sword,  
Thou wilt perform my bidding.

*Ant.*

I will, my lord.

*Leon.* Mark, and perform it; (seest thou?) for the  
fail

Of any point in't shall not only be  
 Death to thyself, but to thy lewd-tongu'd wife;  
 Whom, for this time, we pardon. We enjoin thee,  
 As thou art liegeman to us, that thou carry  
 This female bastard hence; and that thou bear it  
 To some remote and desert place, quite out  
 Of our dominions; and that there thou leave it,  
 Without more mercy, to its own protection,  
 And favour of the climate. As by strange fortune  
 It came to us, I do in justice charge thee,—  
 On thy soul's peril, and thy body's torture,—  
 That thou commend it strangely to some place,  
 Where chance may nurse, or end it: Take it up.

*Ant.* I swear to do this, though a present death  
 Had been more merciful.—Come on, poor babe:  
 Some powerful spirit instruct the kites and ravens,  
 To be thy nurses! Wolves, and bears, they say,  
 Casting their savageness aside, have done  
 Like offices of pity.—Sir, be prosperous  
 In more than this deed doth require! and blessing,  
 Against this cruelty, fight on thy side,  
 Poor thing, condemn'd to loss! [*Exit, with the Child*]

*Leon.*

No, I'll not rear

Another's issue.

*I Atten.*

Please your highness, posts,  
 From those you sent to th' Oracle, are come  
 An hour since: Cleomenes and Dion,  
 Being well arriv'd from Delphos, are both landed,  
 Hasting to th' court.



*I Lord.* So please you, sir, their speed  
Hath been beyond account.

*Leon.* Twenty-three days  
They have been absent: 'Tis good speed; foretels,  
The great Apollo suddenly will have  
The truth of this appear. Prepare you lords;  
Summon a session, that we may arraign  
Our most disloyal lady: for, as she hath  
Been publickly accus'd, so shall she have  
A just and open trial. While she lives,  
My heart will be a burden to me. Leave me;  
And think upon my bidding. [*Exeunt.*

### ACT III.

SCENE I.—*The same. A street in some town.*

*Enter CLEOMENES and DION.*

*Cleo.* The climate's delicate; the air most sweet;  
Fertile the isle; the temple much surpassing  
The common praise it bears.

*Dion.* I shall report,  
For most it caught me, the celestial habits,  
(Methinks, I so should term them,) and the reverence  
Of the grave wearers. O, the sacrifice!  
How ceremonious, solemn, and unearthly  
It was i' th' offering!

*Cleo.* But, of all, the burst

And the ear-deafening voice o' th' oracle,  
Kin to Jove's thunder, so surpriz'd my sense,  
That I was nothing.

*Dion.* If the event o' th' journey  
Prove as successful to the queen,—O, be't so!—  
As it hath been to us, rare, pleasant, speedy;  
The time is worth the use on't.

*Cleo.* Great Apollo,  
Turn all to th' best! These proclamations,  
So forcing faults upon Hermione,  
I little like.

*Dion.* The violent carriage of it  
Will clear, or end, the business: When the oracle,  
(Thus by Apollo's great divine seal'd up,)  
Shall the contents discover, something rare,  
Even then will rush to knowledge.—Go,—fresh  
horses;—  
And gracious be the issue! [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*The same. A court of justice.*

*LEONTES, Lords, and Officers, appear properly seated.*

*Leon.* This sessions (to our great grief, we pronounce,)

Even pushes 'gainst our heart: The party tried,  
The daughter of a king; our wife; and one  
Of us too much belov'd.—Let us be clear'd  
Of being tyrannous, since we so openly  
Proceed in justice; which shall have due course,  
Even to the guilt, or the purgation.—  
Produce the prisoner.

*Offi.* It is his highness' pleasure, that the queen  
Appear in person here in court.—Silence!

HERMIONE is brought in, guarded; PAULINA and Ladies, attending.

*Leon.* Read the indictment.

*Offi.* *Hermione, queen to the worthy Leontes, king of Sicilia, thou art here accused and arraigned of high treason, in committing adultery with Polixenes, king of Bohemia; and conspiring with Camillo to take away the life of our sovereign lord the king, thy royal husband: the pretence whereof being by circumstances partly laid open, thou, Hermione, contrary to the faith and allegiance of a true subject, didst counsel and aid them, for their better safety, to fly away by night.*

*Her.* Since what I am to say, must be but that  
Which contradicts my accusation; and  
The testimony on my part, no other  
But what comes from myself; it shall scarce boot me  
To say, *Not guilty*: mine integrity,  
Being counted falsehood, shall, as I express it,  
Be so receiv'd. But thus,—If powers divine  
Behold our human actions, (as they do,)  
I doubt not then, but innocence shall make  
False accusation blush, and tyranny  
Tremble at patience.—You, my lord, best know,  
(Who least will seem to do so,) my past life  
Hath been as continent, as chaste, as true,  
As I am now unhappy; which is more  
Than history can pattern, though devis'd,  
And play'd, to take spectators: For behold me,—  
A fellow of the royal bed, which owe  
A moiety of the throne, a great king's daughter,  
The mother to a hopeful prince,—here standing,  
To prate and talk for life, and honour, 'fore

Who please to come and hear. For life, I prize it  
 As I weigh grief, which I would spare: for honour,  
 'Tis a derivative from me to mine,  
 And only that I stand for. I appeal  
 To your own conscience, sir, before Polixenes  
 Came to your court, how I was in your grace,  
 How merited to be so; since he came,  
 With what encounter so uncurrent I  
 Have strain'd, t' appear thus: if one jot beyond  
 The bound of honour; or, in act, or will,  
 That way inclining; harden'd be the hearts  
 Of all that hear me, and my near'st of kin  
 Cry, Fye upon my grave!

*Leon.* I ne'er heard yet,  
 That any of these bolder vices wanted  
 Less impudence to gainsay what they did,  
 Than to perform it first.

*Her.* That's true enough;  
 Though 'tis a saying, sir, not due to me.

*Leon.* You will not own it.

*Her.* More than mistress of,  
 Which comes to me in name of fault, I must not  
 At all acknowledge. For Polixenes,  
 (With whom I am accus'd,) I do confess,  
 I lov'd him, as in honour he requir'd;  
 With such a kind of love, as might become  
 A lady like me; with a love, even such,  
 So, and no other, as yourself commanded:  
 Which not to have done, I think, had been in me  
 Both disobedience and ingratitude,  
 To you, and toward your friend; whose love had spoke,  
 Even since it could speak, from an infant, freely,  
 That it was yours. Now, for conspiracy,

I know not how it tastes; though it be dish'd  
 For me to try how: all I know of it,  
 Is, that Camillo was an honest man;  
 And, why he left your court, the gods themselves,  
 Wotting no more than I, are ignorant.

*Leon.* You knew of his departure, as you know  
 What you have underta'en to do in's absence.

*Her.* Sir,

You speak a language that I understand not:  
 My life stands in the level of your dreams,  
 Which I'll lay down.

*Leon.*

Your actions are my dreams;  
 You had a bastard by Polixenes,  
 And I but dream'd it:—As you were past all shame,  
 (Those of your fact are so,) so past all truth:  
 Which to deny, concerns more than avails:

For as

Thy brat hath been cast out, like to itself,  
 No father owning it, (which is, indeed,  
 More criminal in thee, than it,) so thou  
 Shalt feel our justice; in whose easiest passage,  
 Look for no less than death.

*Her.*

Sir, spare your threats;

The bug, which you would fright me with, I seek.  
 To me can life be no commodity:  
 The crown and comfort of my life, your favour,  
 I do give lost; for I do feel it gone,  
 But know not how it went: My second joy,  
 And first-fruits of my body, from his presence,  
 I am barr'd, like one infectious: My third comfort,  
 Starr'd most unluckily, is from my breast  
 The innocent milk in its most innocent mouth,  
 Haled out to murder: Myself on every post

Proclaim'd a strumpet; With immodest hatred,  
 The child-bed privilege denied, which 'longs  
 To women of all fashion:—Lastly, hurried  
 Here to this place, i' th' open air, before  
 I have got strength of limit. Now, my liege,  
 Tell me what blessings I have here alive,  
 That I should fear to die? Therefore, proceed.  
 But yet hear this; mistake me not;—No! life,  
 I prize it not a straw:—but for mine honour,  
 (Which I would free,) if I shall be condemn'd  
 Upon surmises; all proofs sleeping else,  
 But what your jealousies awake; I tell you,  
 'Tis rigour, and not law.—Your honours all,  
 I do refer me to the oracle;  
 Apollo be my judge.

*I Lord.*                      This your request  
 Is altogether just: therefore, bring forth,  
 And in Apollo's name, his oracle.

[*Exeunt certain Officers.*]

*Her.* The emperor of Russia was my father:  
 O, that he were alive, and here beholding  
 His daughter's trial! that he did but see  
 The flatness of my misery; yet with eyes  
 Of pity, not revenge!

*Re-enter Officers, with CLEOMENES and DION.*

*Offi.* You here shall swear upon this sword of justice,  
 That you, Cleomenes and Dion, have  
 Been both at Delphos; and from thence have brought  
 This seal'd-up oracle, by the hand deliver'd  
 Of great Apollo's priest; and that, since then,  
 You have not dar'd to break the holy seal,  
 Nor read the secrets in't.

*Cleon.* *Dion.* All this we swear.

*Leon.* Break up the seals, and read.

*Offi.* [*Reads.*] *Hermione is chaste, Polixenes blameless, Camillo a true subject, Leontes a jealous tyrant, his innocent babe truly begotten; and the king shall live without an heir, if that, which is lost, be not found.*

*Lords.* Now blessed be the great Apollo!

*Her.* Praised!

*Leon.* Hast thou read truth?

*Offi.* Ay, my lord; even so

As it is here set down.

*Leon.* There is no truth at all i' th' oracle:

The sessions shall proceed; this is mere falsehood.

*Enter a Servant, hastily.*

*Serv.* My lord the king, the king!

*Leon.* What is the business?

*Serv.* O Sir, I shall be hated to report it:

The prince your son, with mere conceit and fear  
Of the queen's speed, is gone.

*Leon.* How! gone?

*Serv.* Is dead.

*Leon.* Apollo's angry; and the heavens themselves  
Do strike at my injustice. [*HERMIONE faints.*] How  
now there?

*Paul.* This news is mortal to the queen:—Look down,  
And see what death is doing.

*Leon.* Take her hence:

Her heart is but o'ercharg'd; she will recover.—  
I have too much believ'd mine own suspicion:—  
'Beseech you, tenderly apply to her  
Some remedies for life.—Apollo, pardon

[*Exeunt PAULINA and Ladies, with HERM*

My great profaneness 'gainst thine oracle!—  
 I'll reconcile me to Polixenes;  
 New woo my queen; recall the good Camillo;  
 Whom I proclaim a man of truth, of mercy:  
 For, being transported by my jealousies  
 To bloody thoughts and to revenge, I chose  
 Camillo for the minister, to poison  
 My friend Polixenes: which had been done,  
 But that the good mind of Camillo tardied  
 My swift command, though I with death, and with  
 Reward, did threaten and encourage him,  
 Not doing it, and being done: he, most humane,  
 And fill'd with honour, to my kingly guest  
 Unclassp'd my practice; quit his fortunes here,  
 Which you knew great; and to the certain hazard  
 Of all incertainties himself commended,  
 No richer than his honour:—How he glisters  
 Thorough my rust! and how his piety  
 Does my deeds make the blacker!

*Re-enter PAULINA.*

*Paul.* Woe the while!  
 O, cut my lace; lest my heart, cracking it,  
 Break too!

*1 Lord.* What fit is this, good lady?

*Paul.* What studied torments, tyrant, hast for me?  
 What wheels? racks? fires? What slaying? boiling,  
 In leads, or oils? what old, or newer torture  
 Must I receive; whose every word deserves  
 To taste of thy most worst? Thy tyranny  
 Together working with thy jealousies,—  
 Fancies too weak for boys, too green and idle  
 For girls of nine!—O, think, what they have done,



And then run mad, indeed; stark mad! for all  
 Thy by-gone fooleries were but spices of it.  
 That thou betray'dst Polixenes, 'twas nothing;  
 That did but show thee, of a fool, inconstant,  
 And damnable ungrateful: nor was't much,  
 Thou would'st have poison'd good Camillo's honour,  
 To have him kill a king; poor trespasses,  
 More monstrous standing by: whereof I reckon  
 The casting forth to crows thy baby daughter,  
 To be or none, or little; though a devil  
 Would have shed water out of fire, ere don't:  
 Nor is't directly laid to thee, the death  
 Of the young prince; whose honourable thoughts  
 (Thoughts high for one so tender,) cleft the heart  
 That could conceive, a gross and foolish sire  
 Blemish'd his gracious dam: this is not, no,  
 Laid to thy answer: But the last,—O, lords,  
 When I have said, cry, woe!—the queen, the queen,  
 The sweetest, dearest, creature's dead; and vengeance  
 for't

Not dropp'd down yet.

1 *Lord.*

The higher powers forbid!

*Paul.* I say, she's dead; I'll swear't: if word, nor  
 oath,

Prevail not, go and see: if you can bring  
 Tincture, or lustre, in her lip, her eye,  
 Heat outwardly, or breath within, I'll serve you  
 As I would do the gods.—But, O thou tyrant!  
 Do not repent these things; for they are heavier  
 Than all thy woes can stir: therefore betake thee  
 To nothing but despair. A thousand knees  
 Ten thousand years together, naked, fasting,  
 Upon a barren mountain, and still winter

In storm perpetual, could not move the gods  
To look that way thou wert.

*Leon.* Go on, go on:  
Thou canst not speak too much; I have deserv'd  
All tongues to talk their bitterest.

*Lord.* Say no more;  
How e'er the business goes, you have made fault  
I't' boldness of your speech.

*Paul.* I am sorry for't;  
As I faults I make, when I shall come to know them,  
I do repent: Alas, I have show'd too much  
The rashness of a woman: he is touch'd  
To th' noble heart.—What's gone, and what's past  
help,

Should be past grief: Do not receive affliction  
At my petition, I beseech you; rather  
Let me be punish'd, that have minded you  
Of what you should forget. Now, good my liege,  
Sir, royal sir, forgive a foolish woman:  
The love I bore your queen,—lo, fool again!—  
I'll speak of her no more, nor of your children;  
I'll not remember you of my own lord,  
Who is lost too: Take your patience to you,  
And I'll say nothing.

*Leon.* Thou didst speak but well,  
When most the truth; which I receive much better  
Than to be pitied of thee. Pr'ythee, bring me  
To the dead bodies of my queen, and son:  
One grave shall be for both; upon them shall  
The causes of their death appear, unto  
Our shame perpetual: Once a day I'll visit  
The chapel where they lie; and tears, shed there,  
Shall be my recreation: So long as

Nature will bear up with this exercise,  
So long I daily vow to use it. Come,  
And lead me to these sorrows.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—Bohemia. *A desert country near the sea.*

*Enter* ANTIGONUS, *with the Child; and a Mariner.*

*Ant.* Thou art perfect then, our ship hath touch'd  
upon

The deserts of Bohemia?

*Mar.* Ay, my lord; and fear  
We have landed in ill time: the skies look grimly,  
And threaten present blusters. In my conscience,  
The heavens with that we have in hand are angry,  
And frown upon us.

*Ant.* Their sacred wills be done!—Go, get aboard;  
Look to thy bark; I'll not be long, before  
I call upon thee.

*Mar.* Make your best haste; and go not  
Too far i' th' land: 'tis like to be loud weather;  
Besides, this place is famous for the creatures  
Of prey, that keep upon't.

*Ant.* Go thou away:  
I'll follow instantly.

*Mar.* I am glad at heart  
To be so rid o' th' business.

[*Erit.*]

*Ant.* Come, poor babe:—  
I have heard, (but not believ'd,) the spirits of the dead  
May walk again: if such thing be, thy mother  
Appear'd to me last night; for ne'er was dream  
So like a waking. To me comes a creature,  
Sometimes her head on one side, some another;  
I never saw a vessel-of-like sorrow,

So fill'd, and so becoming : in pure white robes,  
 Like very sanctity, she did approach  
 My cabin where I lay: thrice bow'd before me;  
 And, gasping to begin some speech, her eyes  
 Became two spouts: the fury spent, anon  
 Did this break from her: *Good Antigonus,*  
*Since fate, against thy better disposition,*  
*Hath made thy person for the thrower-out*  
*Of my poor babe, according to thine oath,—*  
*Places remote enough are in Bohemia,*  
*There weep, and leave it crying; and, for the babe*  
*Is counted lost for ever, Perdita,*  
*I pr'ythee, call't: for this ungentle business,*  
*Put on thee by my lord, thou ne'er shalt see*  
*Thy wife Paulina more:—*and so, with shrieks,  
 She melted into air. Affrighted much,  
 I did in time collect myself; and thought  
 This was so, and no slumber. Dreams are toys:  
 Yet, for this once, yea, superstitiously,  
 I will be squar'd by this. I do believe,  
 Hermione hath suffer'd death; and that  
 Apollo would, this being indeed the issue  
 Of king Polixenes, it should here be laid,  
 Either for life, or death, upon the earth  
 Of its right father.—Blossom, speed thee well!

*[Laying down the Child.*

There lie; and there thy character: there these;

*[Laying down a bundle.*

Which may, if fortune please, both breed thee, pretty,  
 And still rest thine.—The storm begins:—Poor  
 wretch,

That, for thy mother's fault, art thus expos'd  
 To loss, and what may follow!—Weep I cannot,

But my heart bleeds: and most accurs'd am I,  
 To be by oath enjoin'd to this.—Farewell!  
 The day frowns more and more; thou art like to have  
 A lullaby too rough: I never saw  
 The heavens so dim by day. A savage clamour?—  
 Well may I get aboard!—This is the chace;  
 I am gone for ever. *[Exit, pursued by a Bear.]*

*Enter an old Shepherd.*

*Shep.* I would, there were no age between ten and three and twenty; or that youth would sleep out the rest: for there is nothing in the between but getting wenches with child, wronging the ancients, stealing, fighting.—Hark you now!—Would any but these boiled brains of nineteen, and two-and-twenty, hunt this weather? They have scared away two of my best sheep; which, I fear, the wolf will sooner find, than the master: if any where I have them, 'tis by the seaside, browsing on ivy. Good luck, an't be thy will! what have we here? *[Taking up the Child.]* Mercy on's, a barne; a very pretty barne! A boy, or a child, I wonder? A pretty one; a very pretty one: Sure, some scape: though I am not bookish, yet I can read waiting-gentlewoman in the scape. This has been some stair-work, some trunk-work, some behind-door-work: they were warmer that got this, than the poor thing is here. I'll take it up for pity: yet I'll tarry till my son come; he hollaed but even now. Whoa, ho ho!

*Enter Clown.*

*Clo.* Hillea, loa!

*Shep.* What, art so near? If thou'lt see a thing to

talk on when thou art dead and rotten, come hither:  
What ailest thou, man?

*Clo.* I have seen two such sights, by sea, and by land;—but I am not to say, it is a sea, for it is now the sky; betwixt the firmament and it, you cannot thrust a bodkin's point.

*Shep.* Why, boy, how is it?

*Clo.* I would, you did but see how it chafes, how it rages, how it takes up the shore! but that's not to the point: O, the most piteous cry of the poor souls! sometimes to see 'em, and not to see 'em: now the ship boring the moon with her main-mast; and anon swallowed with yest and froth, as you'd thrust a cork into a hogshead. And then for the land service,—To see how the bear tore out his shoulder-bone; how he cried to me for help, and said, his name was Antigonus, a nobleman:—But to make an end of the ship:—to see how the sea flap-dragoned it:—but; first, how the poor souls roared, and the sea mocked them;—and how the poor gentleman roared, and the bear mocked him, both roaring louder than the sea, or weather.

*Shep.* Name of mercy, when was this, boy?

*Clo.* Now, now; I have not winked since I saw these sights: the men are not yet cold under water, nor the bear half dined on the gentleman; he's at it now.

*Shep.* Would I had been by, to have helped the old man!

*Clo.* I would you had been by the ship side, to have helped her; there your charity would have lacked footing.

[*Aside.*

*Shep.* Heavy matters! heavy matters! but look thes

here, boy. Now bless thyself; thou met'st with things dying, I with things new born. Here's a sight for thee; look thee, a bearing-cloth for a squire's child! Look thee here; take up, take up, boy; open't. So, let's see; It was told me, I should be rich by the fairies: this is some changeling:—open't: What's within, boy?

*Clo.* You're a made old man; if the sins of your youth are forgiven you, you're well to live. Gold! all gold!

*Shep.* This is fairy gold, boy, and 'twill prove so: up with it, keep it close; home, home, the next way. We are lucky, boy; and to be so still, requires nothing but secrecy.—Let my sheep go:—Come, good boy, the next way home.

*Clo.* Go you the next way with your findings; I'll go see if the bear be gone from the gentleman, and how much he had eaten: they are never curst, but when they are hungry: if there be any of him left, I'll bury it.

*Shep.* That's a good deed: If thou may'st discern by that which is left of him, what he is, fetch me to the sight of him.

*Clo.* Marry, will I; and you shall help to put him i' th' ground.

*Shep.* 'Tis a lucky day, boy; and we'll do good deeds on't. [*Exeunt.*

## ACT IV.

*Enter Time, as Chorus.*

*Time.* I,—that please some, try all; both joy, and  
terror,

Of good and bad; that make, and unfold error,—  
Now take upon me, in the name of Time,  
To use my wings. Impute it not a crime,  
To me, or my swift passage, that I slide  
O'er sixteen years, and leave the growth untried  
Of that wide gap; since it is in my power  
To o'erthrow law, and in one self-born hour  
To plant and o'erwhelm custom: Let me pass  
The same I am, ere ancient'st order was,  
Of what is now receiv'd: I witness to  
The times that brought them in; so shall I do  
To th' freshest things now reigning; and make stale  
The glistering of this present, as my tale  
Now seems to it. Your patience this allowing,  
I turn my glass; and give my scene such growing,  
As you had slept between. Leontea leaving  
Th' effects of his fond jealousies; so grieving,  
That he shuts up himself; imagine me,  
Gentle spectators, that I now may be  
In fair Bohemia; and remember well,  
I mentioned a son o' th' king's, which Florizel  
I now name to you; and with speed so pace  
To speak of Perdita, now grown in grace  
Equal with wond'ring: What of her ensues,  
I list not prophecy; but let Time's news



Be known, when 'tis brought forth:—s shepherd's  
 daughter,  
 And what to her adheres, which follows after,  
 Is th' argument of time: Of this allow,  
 If ever you have spent time worse ere now;  
 If never yet, that Time himself doth say,  
 He wishes earnestly, you never may. [Exit.

SCENE I.—*The same. A room in the palace of Polixenes.*

*Enter POLIXENES and CAMILLO.*

*Pol.* I pray thee, good Camillo, be no more importunate: 'tis a sickness, denying thee any thing; a death, to grant this.

*Cam.* It is fifteen years, since I saw my country: though I have, for the most part, been aired abroad, I desire to lay my bones there. Besides, the penitent king, my master, hath sent for me: to whose feeling sorrows I might be some allay, or I o'erween to think so; which is another spur to my departure.

*Pol.* As thou lovest me, Camillo, wipe not out the rest of thy services, by leaving me now: the need I have of thee, thine own goodness hath made; better not to have had thee, than thus to want thee: thou, having made me businesses, which none, without thee can sufficiently manage, must either stay to execute them thyself, or take away with thee the very services thou hast done: which if I have not enough considered, (as too much I cannot,) to be more thankful to thee, shall be my study; and my profit therein, the heaping friendships. Of that fatal country Sicilia, pr'ythee speak no more: whose very naming punishes

me with the remembrance of that penitent, as thou call'st him, and reconciled king, my brother; whose loss of his most precious queen, and children, are even now to be afresh lamented. Say to me, when saw'st thou the prince Florizel my son? Kings are no less unhappy, their issue not being gracious, than they are in losing them, when they have approved their virtues.

*Cam.* Sir, it is three days, since I saw the prince: What his happier affairs may be, are to me unknown: but I have, missingly, noted, he is of late much retired from court; and is less frequent to his princely exercises, than formerly he hath appeared.

*Pol.* I have considered so much, Camillo; and with some care; so far, that I have eyes under my service, which look upon his removedness: from whom I have this intelligence; That he is seldom from the house of a most homely shepherd; a man, they say, that from very nothing, and beyond the imagination of his neighbours, is grown into an unspeakable estate.

*Cam.* I have heard, sir, of such a man, who hath a daughter of most rare note: the report of her is extended more, than can be thought to begin from such a cottage.

*Pol.* That's likewise part of my intelligence. But, I fear the angle that plucks our son thither. Thou shalt accompany us to the place: where we will, not appearing what we are, have some question with the shepherd; from whose simplicity, I think it not uneasy to get the cause of my son's resort thither. Prythee, be my present partner in this business, and lay aside the thoughts of Sicilia.

*Cam.* I willingly obey your command.

Pol. My best Camillo!—We must disguise ourselves. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—*The same. A road near the Shepherd's cottage.*

*Enter AUTOLYCUS, singing.*

*When daffodils begin to peer,—  
With, heigh! the doxy over the dale,—  
Why, then comes in the sweet o' th' year:  
For the red blood reigns in the winter's pale.*

*The white sheet bleaching on the hedge,—  
With, hey! the sweet birds, O, how they sing!—  
Doth set my pugging tooth on edge:  
For a quart of ale is a dish for a king. ]*

*The lark, that tirra-lirra chants,—  
With, hey! with, hey! the thrush and the jay,—  
Are summer songs for me and my aunts,  
While we lie tumbling in the hay.*

I have served prince Florizel, and, in my time, wore three-pile; but now I am out of service:

*But shall I go mourn for that, my dear?  
The pale moon shines by night:  
And when I wander here and there,  
I then do most go right.*

*If tinkers may have leave to live,  
And bear the sow-skin budget;  
Then my account I well may give,  
And in the stocks avouch it.*

My traffick is sheets; when the kite builds, look to lesser linen. My father named me, Autolycus; who, being, as I am, littered under Mercury, was likewise a snapper-up of unconsidered trifles: With die, and drab, I purchased this caparison; and my revenue is

the silly cheat: Gallows, and knock, are too powerful on the highway: beating, and hanging; are terrors to me; for the life to come, I sleep out the thought of it.—A prize! a prize!

*Enter Clown.*

*Clo.* Let me see:—Every 'leven wether—tods; every tod yields—pound and odd shilling: fifteen hundred shorn,—What comes the wool to?

*Aut.* If the springe hold, the cock's mine. [*Aside.*

*Clo.* I cannot do't without counters.—Let me see; what I am to buy for our sheep-shearing feast? *Three pound of sugar; five pound of currants; rice*—What will this sister of mine do with rice? But my father hath made her mistress of the feast, and she lays it on. She hath made me four-and-twenty nosegays for the shearers: three-man song-men all, and very good ones; but they are most of them means and bases: but one Puritan amongst them, and he sings psalms to hornpipes. I must have *saffron*, to colour the warden pies; *mace*,—*dates*,—none; that's out of my note: *nutmegs*, *seven*; a *race*, or *two*, of *ginger*; but that I may beg;—*four pound of prunes*, and as many of *raisins o' th' sun*.

*Aut.* O, that ever I was born! [*Groveling on the ground.*

*Clo.* I'th' name of me,——

*Aut.* O, help me, help me! pluck but off these rags; and then, death, death!

*Clo.* Alack, poor soul! thou hast need of more rags to lay on thee, rather than have these off.

*Aut.* O, sir, the loathsomeness of them offends me more than the stripes I have received; which are mighty ones, and millions.

*Clo.* Alas, poor man! a million of beating may come to a great matter.

*Aut.* I am robbed, sir, and beaten; my money and apparel ta'en from me, and these detestable things put upon me.

*Clo.* What, by a horse-man, or a foot-man?

*Aut.* A foot-man, sweet sir, a foot-man.

*Clo.* Indeed, he should be a foot-man, by the garments he hath left with thee; if this be a horseman's coat, it hath seen very hot service. Lend me thy hand, I'll help thee: come, lend me thy hand.

[*Helping him up.*]

*Aut.* O! good sir, tenderly, oh!

*Clo.* Alas, poor soul.

*Aut.* O, good sir, softly, good sir: I fear, sir, my shoulder-blade is out.

*Clo.* How now? canst stand?

*Aut.* Softly, dear sir; [*Picks his pocket.*] good sir, softly: you ha' done me a charitable office.

*Clo.* Dost lack any money? I have a little money for thee.

*Aut.* No, good sweet sir; no, I beseech you, sir: I have a kinsman not past three quarters of a mile hence, unto whom I was going; I shall there have money, or any thing I want: Offer me no money, I pray you; that kills my heart.

*Clo.* What manner of fellow was he that robbed you?

*Aut.* A fellow, sir, that I have known to go about with trol-my-dames: I knew him once a servant of the prince; I cannot tell, good sir, for which of his virtues it was, but he was certainly whipped out of the court.

*Clo.* His vices, you would say; there's no virtue

whipped out of the court: they cherish it, to make it stay there; and yet it will no more but abide.

*Aut.* Vices I would say, sir. I know this man well—he hath been since an ape-bearer; then a process-server, a bailiff; then he compassed a motion of the prodigal son, and married a tinker's wife within a mile where my land and living lies; and, having flown over many knavish professions, he settled only in rogue: some call him Autolycus.

*Clo.* Out upon him! Prig, for my life, prig: he haunts wakes, fairs, and bear-baitings.

*Aut.* Very true, sir; he, sir, he; that's the rogue, that put me into this apparel.

*Clo.* Not a more cowardly rogue in all Bohemia; if you had but looked big, and spit at him, he'd have run.

*Aut.* I must confess to you, sir, I am no fighter: I am false of heart that way; and that he knew, I warrant him.

*Clo.* How do you now?

*Aut.* Sweet sir, much better than I was; I can stand, and walk: I will even take my leave of you, and pace softly towards my kinsman's.

*Clo.* Shall I bring thee on the way?

*Aut.* No, good-faced sir; no, sweet sir.

*Clo.* Then fare thee well; I must go buy spices for our sheep-shearing.

*Aut.* Prosper you, sweet sir!—*[Exit Clown.]* Your purse is not hot enough to purchase your spice. I'll be with you at your sheep-shearing too: If I make not this cheat bring out another, and the shearers prove sheep, let me be unrolled, and my name put in the book of virtue!

*Jog on, jog on, the foot-path way,  
And merrily hent the stile-a:  
A merry heart goes all the day,  
Your sad tires in a mile-a.*

[Exit.]

SCENE III.—*The same. A Shepherd's cottage.*

*Enter FLORIZEL and PERDITA.*

*Flo.* These your unusual weeds to each part of you  
Do give a life: no shepherdess; but Flora,  
Peering in April's front. This your sheep-shearing  
Is as a meeting of the petty gods,  
And you the queen on't.

*Per.* Sir, my gracious lord,  
To chide at your extremes, it not becomes me;  
O, pardon, that I name them: your high self,  
The gracious mark o' th' land, you have obscur'd  
With a swain's wearing; and me, poor lowly maid,  
Most goddess-like prank'd up: But that our feasts  
In every mess have folly, and the feeders  
Digest it with a custom, I should blush  
To see you so attired; sworn, I think,  
To show myself a glass.

*Flo.* I bless the time,  
When my good falcon made her flight across  
Thy father's ground.

*Per.* Now Jove afford you cause!  
To me, the difference forges dread; your greatness  
Hath not been us'd to fear. Even now I tremble  
To think, your father, by some accident,  
Should pass this way, as you did: O, the fates!  
How would he look, to see his work, so noble,  
Vilely bound up? What would he say? Or how

Should I, in these my borrow'd flaunts, behold  
The sternness of his presence?

*Flo.*

Apprehend

Nothing but jollity. The gods themselves,  
Humbling their deities to love, have taken  
The shapes of beasts upon them: Jupiter  
Became a bull, and bellow'd; the green Neptune  
A ram, and bleated; and the fire-rob'd god,  
Golden Apollo, a poor humble swain,  
As I seem now: Their transformations  
Were never for a piece of beauty rarer;  
Nor in a way so chaste: since my desires  
Run not before mine honour; nor my lusts  
Burn hotter than my faith.

*Per.*

O but, dear sir,

Your resolution cannot hold, when 'tis  
Oppos'd, as it must be, by the power o' th' king:  
One of these two must be necessities,  
Which then will speak; that you must change this  
purpose,

Or I my life.

*Flo.*

Thou dearest Perdita,

With these forc'd thoughts, I pry'thee, darken not  
The mirth o' th' feast: Or I'll be thine, my fair,  
Or not my father's: for I cannot be  
Mine own, nor any thing to any, if  
I be not thine: to this I am most constant,  
Though destiny say, no. Be merry, gentle;  
Strangle such thoughts as these, with any thing  
That you behold the while. Your guests are coming:  
Lift up your countenances; as it were the day  
Of celebration of that nuptial, which  
We two have sworn shall none.



*Per.* O lady fortune.  
Stand you auspicious!

*Enter Shepherd, with POLIXENES and CAMILLO, disguised; Clown, MOPSA, DORCAS, and others.*

*Flo.* See, your guests approach:  
Address yourself to entertain them sprightly,  
And let's be red with mirth.

*Shep.* Fye, daughter! when my old wife liv'd, upon  
This day, she was both pantler, butler, cook;  
Both dame and servant: welcom'd all; serv'd all:  
Would sing her song, and dance her turn: now here,  
At upper end o' th' table, now, i' th' middle;  
On his shoulder, and his: her face o' fire  
With labour; and the thing, she took to quench it,  
She would to each one sip: You are retir'd,  
As if you were a feasted one, and not  
The hostess of the meeting: Pray you, bid  
These unknown friends to us welcome: for it is  
A way to make us better friends, more known.  
Come, quench your blushes; and present yourself  
That which you are, mistress o' th' feast: Come on,  
And bid us welcome to your sheep-shearing,  
As your good flock shall prosper.

*Per.* Welcome, sir! [*To POL.*]  
It is my father's will, I should take on me  
The hostesship o' th' day:—You're welcome, sir!

[*To CAMILLO.*]  
Give me those flowers there, Dorcas.—Reverend sirs,  
For you there's rosemary, and rue; these keep  
Seeming, and savour, all the winter long:  
Grace, and remembrance, be to you both,  
And welcome to our shearing!

*Pol.* . . . . . *Shepherdess.*  
 (A fair one are you,) well you fit our ages  
 With flowers of winter.

*Per.* . . . . . Sir, the year growing ancient,—  
 Not yet on summer's death, nor on the birth  
 Of trembling winter,—the fairest flowers o' th' season  
 Are our carnations, and streak'd gillyflowers,  
 Which some call nature's bastards: of that kind  
 Our rustick garden's barren; and I care not  
 To get slips of them.

*Pol.* . . . . . Wherefore, gentle maiden,  
 Do you neglect them?

*Per.* . . . . . For I have heard it said,  
 There is an art, which, in their piedness, shares  
 With great creating nature.

*Pol.* . . . . . Say, there be;  
 Yet nature is made better by no mean,  
 But nature makes that mean: so, o'er that art,  
 Which, you say, adds to nature, is an art  
 That nature makes. You see, sweet maid, we marry  
 A gentler scion to the wildest stock;  
 And make conceive a bark of baser kind  
 By bud of nobler race; This is an art  
 Which does mend nature,—change it rather: but  
 The art itself is nature.

*Per.* . . . . . So it is.

*Pol.* Then make your garden rich in gillyflowers,  
 And do not call them bastards.

*Per.* . . . . . I'll not put  
 The dibble in earth to set one slip of them:  
 No more than, were I painted, I would wish  
 This youth should say, 'twere well; and only therefore  
 Desire to breed by me.—Here's flowers for you;

Hot lavender, mints, savory, marjoram;  
 The marigold, that goes to bed with th' sun,  
 And with him rises weeping; these are flowers  
 Of middle summer, and, I think, they are given  
 To men of middle age: You are very welcome.

*Cam.* I should leave grazing, were I of your flock,  
 And only live by gazing.

*Per.* Out, alas!

You'd be so lean, that blasts of January  
 Would blow you through and through.—Now, my  
 fairest friend,

I would, I had some flowers o' th' spring, that might  
 Become your time of day; and yours, and yours;  
 That wear upon your virgin branches yet  
 Your maidenheads growing:—O Proserpina,  
 For the flowers now, that, frighted, thou let'st fall  
 From Dis's waggon! daffodils,

That come before the swallow dares, and take  
 The winds of March with beauty; violets, dim,  
 But sweeter than the lids of Juno's eyes,  
 Or Cytherea's breath; pale primroses,  
 That die unmarried, ere they can behold  
 Bright Phœbus in his strength, a malady  
 Most incident to maids; bold oxlips, and  
 The crown-imperial; lilies of all kinds,  
 The flower-de-luce being one! O, these I lack,  
 To make you garlands of; and, my sweet friend,  
 To strew him o'er and o'er.

*Flo.* What? like a corse?

*Per.* No, like a bank, for love to lie and play on;  
 Not like a corse: or if,—not to be buried,  
 But quick, and in mine arms. Come, take your flowers:  
 Methinks, I play as I have seen them do

In Whitsun' pastorals: sure, this robe of mine  
Does change my disposition:

*Flo.* What you do,  
Still betters what is done. When you speak, sweet,  
I'd have you do it ever: when you sing,  
I'd have you buy and sell so; so give alms;  
Pray so; and, for the ordering your affairs,  
To sing them too: When you do dance, I wish you  
A wave o' th' sea, that you might ever do  
Nothing but that; move still, still so, and own  
No other function: Each your doing,  
So singular in each particular,  
Crowns what you are doing in the present deeds,  
That all your acts are queens.

*Per.* O Doricles,  
Your praises are too large: but that your youth,  
And the true blood, which fairly peeps through it  
Do plainly give you out an unstain'd shepherd;  
With wisdom I might fear, my Doricles,  
You woo'd me the false way.

*Flo.* I think, you have  
As little skill to fear, as I have purpose  
To put you to't.—But, come; our dance, I pray:  
Your hand, my Perdita: so turtles pair,  
That never mean to part.

*Per.* I'll swear for 'em.

*Pol.* This is the prettiest low-born lass, that ever  
Ran on the green-sward: nothing she does, or seems  
But smacks of something greater than herself;  
Too noble for this place.

*Cam.* He tells her something,  
That makes her blood look out: Good sooth, she is  
The queen of curds and cream.

*Clo.* Come on, strike up.

*Dor.* Mopsa must be your mistress : marry, garlick,  
To mend her kissing with.—

*Mop.* Now, in good time !

*Clo.* Not a word, a word ; we stand upon our  
manners.—

Come, strike up. [Musick.]

*Here a dance of Shepherds and Shepherdesses.*

*Pol.* Pray, good shepherd, what  
Fair swain is this, which dances with your daughter ?

*Shep.* They call him Doricles ; and he boasts himself  
To have a worthy feeding : but I have it  
Upon his own report, and I believe it ;  
He looks like sooth : He says, he loves my daughter ;  
I think so too ; for never gaz'd the moon  
Upon the water, as he'll stand, and read,  
As 'twere, my daughter's eyes : and, to be plain,  
I think, there is not half a kiss to choose,  
Who loves another best.

*Pol.* She dances featly.

*Shep.* So she docs any thing ; though I report it,  
That should be silent : if young Doricles  
Do light upon her, she shall bring him that  
Which he not dreams of.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* O master, if you did but hear the pedler at  
the door, you would never dance again after a tabor  
and pipe ; no, the bagpipe could not move you : he  
sings several tunes, faster than you'll tell money ;  
he utters them as he had eaten ballads, and all men's  
ears grew to his tunes.

*Clo.* He could never come better: he shall come in: I love a ballad but even too well; if it be doleful matter, merrily set down, or a very pleasant thing indeed, and sung lamentably.

*Serv.* He hath songs, for man, or woman, of all sizes; no milliner can so fit his customers with gloves: he has the prettiest love-songs for maids; so without bawdry, which is strange; with such delicate burdens of *dildos* and *fadings*: *jump her and thump her*; and where some stretch-mouth'd rascal would, as it were, mean mischief, and break a foul gap into the matter, he makes the maid to answer, *Whoop, do me no harm, good man*; puts him off, slights him, with *Whoop; do me no harm, good man*.

*Pol.* This is a brave fellow.

*Clo.* Believe me, thou talkest of an admirable-conceited fellow. Has he any unbraided wares?

*Serv.* He hath ribands of all the colours i'th' rainbow; points, more than all the lawyers in Bohemia can learnedly handle, though they come to him by the gross; inkles, caddisses, cambricks, lawns: why, he sings them over, 'as they were gods or goddesses; you would think, a smock were a she-angel; he so chants to the sleeve-hand, and the work about the square on't.

*Clo.* Pr'ythee, bring him in; and let him approach singing.

*Per.* Forewarn him, that he use no scurrilous words in his tunes.

*Clo.* You have of these pedlers, that have more in 'em than you'd think, sister.

*Per.* Ay, good brother, or go about to think.

*Enter AUTOLYCUS, singing.*

*Lawn, as white as driven snow ;  
 Cyprus, black as d'er was crow ;  
 Gloves, as sweet as damask roses ;  
 Masks for faces, and for noses ;  
 Bugle bracelet, necklace-amber,  
 Perfume for a lady's chamber :  
 Golden quoifs, and stomachers,  
 For my lads to give their dears :  
 Pins and poking-sticks of steel,  
 What maids lack from head to heel :  
 Come, buy of me, come ; come buy, come buy :  
 Buy, lads, or else your lasses cry :  
 Come, buy, &c.*

*Clo.* If I were not in love with Mopsa, thou should'st take no money of me ; but being enthrall'd as I am, it will also be the bondage of certain ribands and gloves.

*Mop.* I was promised them against the feast ; but they come not too late now.

*Dor.* He hath promised you more than that, or there be liars.

*Mop.* He hath paid you all he promised you : may be, he has paid you more ; which will shame you to give him again.

*Clo.* Is there no manners left among maids ? will they wear their plackets, where they should bear their faces ? Is there not milking-time, when you are going to bed, or kiln-hole, to whistle off these secrets ; but you must be tittle-tattling before all our gueats ? 'Tis well they are whispering : Clamour your tongues, and not a word more.

*Mop.* I have done. Come, you promised me a tawdry lace, and a pair of sweet gloves.

*Clo.* Have I not told thee, how I was cozened by the way, and lost all my money?

*Aut.* And, indeed, sir, there are cozeners abroad; therefore it behoves men to be wary.

*Clo.* Fear not thou, man, thou shalt lose nothing here.

*Aut.* I hope so, sir; for I have about me many parcels of charge.

*Clo.* What hast here? ballads?

*Mop.* Pray now, buy some: I love a ballad in print, a'-life; for then we are sure they are true.

*Aut.* Here's one to a very doleful tune, How a usurer's wife was brought to bed of twenty money-bags at a burden; and how she longed to eat adders' heads, and toads carbonadoed.

*Mop.* Is it true, think you?

*Aut.* Very true; and but a month old.

*Dor.* Bless me from marrying a usurer!

*Aut.* Here's the midwife's name to't, one mistress Taleporter; and five or six honest wives that were present: Why should I carry lies abroad?

*Mop.* Pray you now, buy it.

*Clo.* Come on, lay it by: And let's first see more ballads; we'll buy the other things anon.

*Aut.* Here's another ballad, Of a fish, that appeared upon the coast, on Wednesday the fourscore of April, forty thousand fathom above water, and sung this ballad against the hard hearts of maids: it was thought, she was a woman, and was turned into a cold fish; for she would not exchange flesh with one that loved her: The ballad is very pitiful, and as true.

*Dor.* Is it true too, think you?



*Aut.* Five justices' hands at it; and witnesses, more than my pack will hold.

*Clo.* Lay it by too: Another.

*Aut.* This is a merry ballad; but a very pretty one.

*Mop.* Let's have some merry ones.

*Aut.* Why, this is a passing merry one; and goes to the tune of, *Two maids wooing a man*: there's scarce a maid westward, but she sings it; 'tis in request, I can tell you.

*Mop.* We can both sing it; if thou'lt bear a part, thou shalt hear; 'tis in three parts.

*Dor.* We had the tune on't a month ago.

*Aut.* I can bear my part; you must know, 'tis my occupation: have at it with you.

SONG.

*A.* Get you hence, for I must go.  
*Where, it fits not you to know.*

*D.* Whither? *M.* O, whither? *D.* Whither?

*M.* It becomes thy oath full well,  
*Thou to me thy secrets tell:*

*D.* Me too, let me go thither.

*M.* Or thou go'st to the grange, or mill:

*D.* If to either, thou dost ill.

*A.* Neither. *D.* What, neither? *A.* Neither.

*D.* Thou hast sworn my love to be:

*M.* Thou hast sworn it more to me:

*Then, whither go'st? say, whither?*

*Clo.* We'll have this song out anon by ourselves; My father and the gentlemen are in sad talk, and we'll not trouble them: Come, bring away thy pack after me. Wenches, I'll buy for you both:—Pedler, let's have the first choice.—Follow me, girls.

*Aut.* And you shall pay well for 'em. [Aside.

*Will you buy any tape,  
Or lace for your cape,  
My dainty duck, my dear-a?  
Any silk, any thread,  
Any toys for your head,  
Of the new'st, and fin'st, fin'st wear-a?  
Come to the pedler;  
Money's a medler,  
That doth utter all men's ware-a.*

[*Exeunt Clown, AUTOLYCUS, DORCAS, and MOPSA.*

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* Master, there is three carters, three shepherds, three neat-herds, three swine-herds, that have made themselves all men of hair; they call themselves saltiers: and they have a dance which the wenches say is a gallimaufry of gambols, because they are not in't; but they themselves are o'th' mind, (if it be not too rough for some, that know little but bowling,) it will please plentifully.

*Shep.* Away! we'll none on't; here has been too much humble foolery already:—I know, sir, we weary you.

*Pol.* You weary those that refresh us: Pray, let's see these four threes of herdsmen.

*Serv.* One three of them, by their own report, sir, hath danced before the king; and not the worst of the three, but jumps twelve foot and a half by the squire.

*Shep.* Leave your prating; since these good men are pleased, let them come in; but quickly now.

*Serv.* Why, they stay at door, sir. [Exit,

*Re-enter Servant, with twelve rusticks habited like satyrs.  
They dance, and then exeunt.*

*Pol.* O, father, you'll know more of that hereafter.—  
Is it not too far gone?—'Tis time to part them.—  
He's simple, and tells much. [*Aside.*—How now, fair  
shepherd?

Your heart is full of something, that does take  
Your mind from feasting. Sooth, when I was young,  
And handed love, as you do, I was wont  
To load my she with knacks: I would have ransack'd  
The pedler's silken treasury, and have pour'd it  
To her acceptance; you have let him go,  
And nothing marted with him: If your lass  
Interpretation should abuse; and call this,  
Your lack of love, or bounty; you were straited  
For a reply, at least, if you make a care  
Of happy holding her.

*Flo.*

Old sir, I know

She prizes not such trifles as these are:  
The gifts, she looks from me, are pack'd and lock'd  
Up in my heart; which I have given already,  
But not deliver'd.—O, hear me breathe my life  
Before this ancient sir, who, it should seem,  
Hath sometime lov'd: I take thy hand; this hand,  
As soft as dove's down, and as white as it;  
Or Ethiopean's tooth; or the fann'd snow,  
That's bolted by the northern blasts twice o'er.

*Pol.* What follows this?—

How prettily the young swain seems to wash  
The hand, was fair before!—I have put you out:—  
But, to your protestation; let me hear  
What you profess.

*Flo.* Do, and be witness to't.

*Pol.* And this my neighbour too?

*Flo.* And he, and more  
Than he, and men; the earth, the heavens, and all:  
That,—were I crown'd the most imperial monarch,  
Thereof most worthy; were I the fairest youth  
That ever made eye swerve; had force, and knowledge,  
More than was ever man's,—I would not prize them,  
Without her love: for her, employ them all;  
Commend them, and condemn them, to her service,  
Or to their own perdition.

*Pol.* Fairly offer'd.

*Cam.* This shows a sound affection.

*Shep.* But, my daughter,  
Say you the like to him?

*Per.* I cannot speak  
So well, nothing so well; no, nor mean better:  
By the pattern of mine own thoughts I cut out  
The purity of his.

*Shep.* Take hands, a bargain;—  
And, friends unknown you shall bear witness to't:  
I give my daughter to him, and will make  
Her portion equal his.

*Flo.* O, that must be  
I'th' virtue of your daughter: one being dead,  
I shall have more than you can dream of yet;  
Enough then for your wonder: But, come on,  
Contract us 'fore these witnesses.

*Shep.* Come, your hand;—  
And, daughter, yours.

*Pol.* Soft, swain, awhile, 'beseech you:  
Have you a father?

*Flo.* I have: But what of him?

*Pol.* Knows he of this?

*Flo.* He neither does, nor shall.

*Pol.* Methinks, a father

Is, at the nuptial of his son, a guest

That best becomes the table. Pray you, once more;

Is not your father grown incapable

Of reasonable affairs? is he not stupid

With age, and altering rheums? Can he speak? hear?

Know man from man? dispute his own estate?

Lies he not bed-rid? and again does nothing,

But what he did being childish?

*Flo.* No, good sir;

He has his health, and ampler strength, indeed,

Than most have of his age.

*Pol.* By my white beard,

You offer him, if this be so, a wrong

Something unfilial: Reason, my son

Should choose himself a wife; but as good reason,

The father, (all whose joy is nothing else

But fair posterity,) should hold some counsel

In such a business.

*Flo.* I yield all this;

But, for some other reasons, my grave sir,

Which 'tis not fit you know, I not acquaint

My father of this business.

*Pol.* Let him know't.

*Flo.* He shall not.

*Pol.* Pr'ythee, let him.

*Flo.* No, he must not.

*Shep.* Let him, my son; he shall not need to grieve

At knowing of thy choice.

*Flo.* Come, come he must not:—

Mark our contract.

*Pol.* Mark your divorce, young sir,  
*[Discovering himself.]*

Whom son I dare not call; thou art too base  
 To be acknowledg'd: Thou a scepter's heir,  
 That thus affect'st a sheep-hook!—Thou old traitor,  
 I am sorry, that, by hanging thee, I can but  
 Shorten thy life one week.—And thou, fresh piece  
 Of excellent witchcraft; who, of force, must know  
 The royal fool thou cop'st with;—

*Shep.* O, my heart!

*Pol.* I'll have thy beauty scratch'd with briars, and  
 made

More homely than thy state.—For thee, fond boy,—  
 If I may ever know, thou dost but sigh,  
 That thou no more shalt see this knack, (as never  
 I mean thou shalt,) we'll bar thee from succession;  
 Not hold thee of our blood, no not our kin,  
 Far than Deucalion off:—Mark thou my words;  
 Follow us to the court.—Thou churl, for this time,  
 Though full of our displeasure, yet we free thee  
 From the dead blow of it.—And you, enchantment,—  
 Worthy enough a herdsman; yea, him too,  
 That makes himself, but for our honour therein,  
 Unworthy thee,—if ever, henceforth, thou  
 These rural latches to his entrance open,  
 Or hoop his body more with thy embraces,  
 I will devise a death as cruel for thee,  
 As thou art tender to't. *[Exit.]*

*Per.* Even here undone!

I was not much afeard: for once, or twice,  
 I was about to speak; and tell him plainly,  
 The selfsame sun, that shines upon his court,  
 Hides not his visage from our cottage, but

Looks on alike.—Will't please you, sir, be gone?

[To FLORIZEL.

I told you, what would come of this: 'Beseech you,  
Of your own state take care: this dream of mine,—  
Being now awake, I'll queen it no inch further,  
But milk my ewes, and weep.

*Cam.*

Why, how now, father?

Speak, ere thou diest.

*Shep.*

I cannot speak, nor think,

Nor dare to know that which I know.—O, sir,

[To FLORIZEL.

You have undone a man of fourscore three,  
That thought to fill his grave in quiet; yea,  
To die upon the bed my father died,  
To lie close by his honest bones: but now  
Some hangman must put on my shroud, and lay me  
Where no priest shovels-in dust.—O cursed wretch!

[To PERDITA.

That knew'st this was the prince, and would'st ad-  
venture

To mingle faith with him.—Undone! undone!

If I might die within this hour, I have liv'd

To die when I desire.

[Exit.

*Flo.*

Why look you so upon me?

I am but sorry, not afraid; delay'd,

But nothing alter'd: What I was, I am:

More straining on, for plucking back; not following

My leash unwillingly.

*Cam.*

Gracious my lord,

You know your father's temper: at this time

He will allow no speech,—which, I do guess,

You do not purpose to him;—and as hardly

Will he endure your sight as yet, I fear:

Then, till the fury of his highness settle,  
Come not before him.

*Flo.* I not purpose it.

I think, Camillo.

*Cam.* Even he, my lord.

*Per.* How often have I told you, 'twould be thus?  
How often said, my dignity would last  
But till 'twere known?

*Flo.* It cannot fail, but by  
The violation of my faith; And then  
Let nature crush the sides o' th' earth together,  
And mar the seeds within!—Lift up thy looks:—  
From my succession wipe me, father! I  
Am heir to my affection.

*Cam.* Be advis'd.

*Flo.* I am; and by my fancy: if my reason  
Will thereto be obedient, I have reason;  
If not, my senses, better pleas'd with madness,  
Do bid it welcome.

*Cam.* This is desperate, sir.

*Flo.* So call it: but it does fulfil my vow;  
I needs must think it honesty. Camillo,  
Not for Bohemia, nor the pomp that may  
Be thereat glean'd; for all the sun sees, or  
The close earth wombs, or the profound seas hide  
In unknown fathoms, will I break my oath  
To this my fair belov'd: Therefore, I pray you,  
As you have ever been my father's honour'd friend,  
When he shall miss me, (as, in faith, I mean not  
To see him any more,) cast your good counsels  
Upon his passion; Let myself and fortune,  
Tug for the time to come. This you may know,  
And so deliver,—I am put to sea



With her, whom here I cannot hold on shore;  
 And, most opportune to our need, I have  
 A vessel rides fast by, but not prepar'd  
 For this design. What course I mean to hold,  
 Shall nothing benefit your knowledge, nor  
 Concern me the reporting.

*Cam.* O, my lord,  
 I would your spirit were easier for advice,  
 Or stronger for your need.

*Flo.* Hark, Perdita.—[*Takes her aside.*  
 Ill hear you by and by. [To CAMILLO.

*Cam.* He's irremovable,  
 Resolv'd for flight: Now were I happy, if  
 His going I could frame to serve my turn;  
 Save him from danger, do him love and honour;  
 Purchase the sight again of dear Sicilia,  
 And that unhappy king, my master, whom  
 I so much thirst to see.

*Flo.* Now, good Camillo,  
 I am so fraught with curious business, that  
 I leave out ceremony. [*Going.*

*Cam.* Sir, I think,  
 You have heard of my poor services, i' th' love  
 That I have borne your father?

*Flo.* Very nobly  
 Have you deserv'd: it is my father's musick,  
 To speak your deeds; not little of his care  
 To have them recompens'd as thought on.

*Cam.* Well, my lord,  
 If you may please to think I love the king;  
 And, through him, what is nearest to him, which is  
 Your gracious self; embrace but my direction,  
 (If your more ponderous and settled project

May suffer alteration,) on mine honour  
 I'll point you where you shall have such receiving  
 As shall become your highness; where you may  
 Enjoy your mistress; (from the whom, I see,  
 There's no disjunction to be made, but by,  
 As heavens forefend! your ruin :) marry her;  
 And (with my best endeavours, in your absence,)  
 Your discontenting father strive to qualify,  
 And bring him up to liking.

*Flo.* How, Camillo,  
 May this, almost a miracle, be done?  
 That I may call thee something more than man,  
 And, after that, trust to thee.

*Cam.* Have you thought on  
 A place, whereto you'll go?

*Flo.* Not any yet:  
 But as th' unthought-on accident is guilty  
 To what we wildly do; so we profess  
 Ourselves to be the slaves of chance, and flies  
 Of every wind that blows.

*Cam.* Then list to me:  
 This follows,—if you will not change your purpose,  
 But undergo this flight;—Make for Sicilia;  
 And there present yourself, and your fair princess,  
 (For so, I see, she must be,) 'fore Leontes;  
 She shall be habited, as it becomes  
 The partner of your bed. Methinks, I see  
 Leontes, opening his free arms, and weeping  
 His welcomes forth: asks thee, the son, forgiveness,  
 As 'twere i' th' father's person: kisses the hands  
 Of your fresh princess: o'er and o'er divides him  
 "Twixt his unkindness and his kindness; the one.

He chides to hell, and bids the other grow,  
Faster than thought, or time.

*Flo.* Worthy Camillo,  
What colour for my visitation shall I  
Hold up before him?

*Cam.* Sent by the king your father  
To greet him, and to give him comforts. Sir,  
The manner of your bearing towards him, with  
What you, as from your father, shall deliver,  
Things known betwixt us three, I'll write you  
down:

The which shall point you forth at every sitting,  
What you must say; that he shall not perceive,  
But that you have your father's bosom there,  
And speak his very heart.

*Flo.* I am bound to you:  
There is some sap in this.

*Cam.* A course more promising  
Than a wild dedication of yourselves  
To unpath'd waters, undream'd shores; most certain,  
To miseries enough: no hope to help you;  
But, as you shake off one, to take another:  
Nothing so certain as your anchors; who  
Do their best office, if they can but stay you  
Where you'll be loath to be: Besides, you know,  
Prosperity's the very bond of love;  
Whose fresh complexion and whose heart together  
Affliction alters.

*Per.* One of these is true:  
I think, affliction may subdue the cheek,  
But not take in the mind.

*Cam.* Yea, say you so?

There shall not, at your father's house, these seven  
years,

Be born another such.

*Flo.* My good Camillo,  
She is as forward of her breeding, as  
I th' rear of birth.

*Cam.* I cannot say, 'tis pity  
She lacks instructions; for she seems a mistress  
To most that teach.

*Per.* Your pardon, sir, for this;  
I'll blush you thanks.

*Flo.* My prettiest Perdita.—  
But, O, the thorns we stand upon!—Camillo,—  
Preserver of my father, now of me;  
The medicin of our house!—how shall we do?  
We are not furnish'd like Bohemia's son;  
Nor shall appear in Sicily—

*Cam.* My lord,  
Fear none of this: I think, you know, my fortunes  
Do all lie there: it shall be so my care  
To have you royally appointed, as if  
The scene you play, were mine. For instance, sir,  
That you may know you shall not want,—one word.  
[*They talk aside.*]

*Enter* AUTOLYCUS.

*Aut.* Ha, ha! what a fool honesty is! and trust, his  
sworn brother, a very simple gentleman! I have sold  
all my trumpery; not a counterfeit stone, not a riband,  
glass, pomander, brooch, table-book, ballad, knife,  
tape, glove, shoe-tye, bracelet, horn-ring, to keep my  
pack from fasting: they throng who should buy first;  
as if my trinkets had been hallowed, and brought a

benediction to the buyer: by which means, I saw whose purse was best in picture; and, what I saw, to my good use, I remembered. My clown (who wants but something to be a reasonable man,) grew so in love with the wenches' song, that he would not stir his pettitoes, till he had both tune and words; which so drew the rest of the herd to me, that all their other senses stuck in ears: you might have pinched a placket, it was senseless; 'twas nothing, to geld a codpiece of a purse; I would have filed keys off, that hung in chains: no hearing, no feeling, but my sir's song, and admiring the nothing of it. So that, in this time of lethargy, I picked and cut most of their festival purses: and had not the old man come in with a whoobub against his daughter and the king's son, and scared my choughs from the chaff, I had not left a purse alive in the whole army.

[CAMILLO, FLORIZEL, and PERDITA, come forward.]

*Cam.* Nay, but my letters by this means being there So soon as you arrive, shall clear that doubt.

*Flo.* And those that you'll procure from king Leontes,——

*Cam.* Shall satisfy your father.

*Per.* Happy be you!

All, that you speak, shows fair,

*Cam.* Who have we here?——

[Seeing AUTOLYCUS.]

We'll make an instrument of this; omit

Nothing, may give us aid.

*Aut.* If they have overheard me now,—— why hanging.  
[Aside.]

*Cam.* How now, good fellow? Why shakest thou so? Fear not, man; here's no harm intended to thee,

*Aut.* I am a poor fellow, sir.

*Cam.* Why, be so still; here's nobody will steal that from thee: Yet, for the outside of thy poverty, we must make an exchange: therefore, discase thee instantly, (thou must think, there's necessity in't,) and change garments with this gentleman: Though the pennyworth, on his side, be the worst, yet hold thee, there's some boot.

*Aut.* I am a poor fellow, sir:—I know ye well enough  
[*Aside.*]

*Cam.* Nay, pr'ythee, despatch: the gentleman is half flayed already.

*Aut.* Are you in earnest, sir?—I smell the trick of it.—  
[*Aside.*]

*Flo.* Despatch, I pr'ythee.

*Aut.* Indeed, I have had earnest; but I cannot with conscience take it.

*Cam.* Unbuckle, unbuckle.—

[*FLO. and AUTOL. exchange garments.*]

Fortunate mistress,—let my prophecy  
Come home to you!—you must retire yourself  
Into some covert: take your sweetheart's hat,  
And pluck it o'er your brows; muffle your face;  
Dismantle you; and as you can, dialiken  
The truth of your own seeming; that you may,  
(For I do fear eyes over you,) to shipboard  
Get undescried.

*Per.* I see, the play so lies,  
That I must bear a part.

*Cam.* No remedy.—  
Have you done there?

*Flo.* Should I now meet my father,  
He would not call me son.

*Cam.* Nay, you shall have  
No hat:—Come, lady, come.—Farewell, my friend.

*Aut.* Adieu, sir.

*Flo.* O Perdita, what have we twain forgot?  
Pray you, a word. [*They converse apart.*]

*Cam.* What I do next, shall be, to tell the king  
[*Aside.*]

Of this escape, and whither they are bound;  
Wherein, my hope is, I shall so prevail,  
To force him after: in whose company  
I shall review Sicilia; for whose sight  
I have a woman's longing.

*Flo.* Fortune speed us!—  
Thus we set on, Camillo, to th' sea-side.

*Cam.* The swifter speed, the better.

[*Exeunt FLORIZEL, PERDITA, and CAMILLO.*]

*Aut.* I understand the business, I hear it: To have  
an open ear, a quick eye, and a nimble hand, is ne-  
cessary for a cut-purse; a good nose is requisite also,  
to smell out work for the other senses. I see, this is  
the time that the unjust man doth thrive. What an  
exchange had this been, without boot? what a boot is  
here, with this exchange? Sure, the gods do this year  
connive at us, and we may do any thing *extempore*.  
The prince himself is about a piece of iniquity; steal-  
ing away from his father, with his clog at his heels:  
If I thought it were not a piece of honesty to acquaint  
the king withal, I would do't: I hold it the more  
knavery to conceal it: and therein am I constant to  
my profession.

*Enter Clown and Shepherd.*

*Aside, aside;—here is more matter for a hot brain:*

Every lane's end, every shop, church, session, hanging,  
yields a careful man work.

*Clo.* See, see; what a man you are now! there is no other way, but to tell the king she's a changeling, and none of your flesh and blood.

*Shep.* Nay, but hear me.

*Clo.* Nay, but hear me.

*Shep.* Go to then.

*Clo.* She being none of your flesh and blood, your flesh and blood has not offended the king; and, so, your flesh and blood is not to be punished by him. Show those things you found about her; those secret things, all but what she has with her: This being done, let the law go whistle; I warrant you.

*Shep.* I will tell the king all, every word, yea, and his son's pranks too; who, I may say, is no honest man neither to his father, nor to me, to go about to make me the king's brother-in-law.

*Clo.* Indeed; brother-in-law was the furthest off you could have been to him; and then your blood had been the dearer, by I know how much an ounce.

*Aut.* Very wisely; puppies!

[*Aside.*

*Shep.* Well; let us to the king; there is that in this fardel, will make him scratch his beard.

*Aut.* I know not what impediment this complaint may be to the flight of my master.

*Clo.* Pray heartily he be at palace.

*Aut.* Though I am not naturally honest, I am so sometimes by chance:—Let me pocket up my pedler's excrement.—[*Takes off his false beard.*] How now, rusticks? whither are you bound?

*Shep.* To the palace, an it like your worship.

*Aut.* Your affairs there? what? with whom? the



condition of that fardel, the place of your dwelling, your names, your ages, of what having, breeding, and any thing that is fitting to be known, discover.

*Clo.* We are but plain fellows, sir.

*Aut.* A lie; you are rough and hairy: Let me have no lying; it becomes none but tradesmen, and they often give us soldiers the lie: but we pay them for it with stamped coin, not stabbing steel; therefore they do not give us the lie.

*Clo.* Your worship had like to have given us one, if you had not taken yourself with the manner.

*Shep.* Are you a courtier, an't like you, sir?

*Aut.* Whether it like me, or no, I am a courtier. See'st thou not the air of the court, in these enfoldings? hath not my gait in it, the measure of the court? receives not thy nose court-odour from me? reflect I not on thy baseness, court-contempt? Think'st thou, for that I insinuate, or toze from thee thy business, I am therefore no courtier? I am courtier, cap-a-pè; and one that will either push on, or pluck back thy business there: whereupon I command thee to open thy affair.

*Shep.* My business, sir, is to the king.

*Aut.* What advocate hast thou to him?

*Shep.* I know not, an't like you.

*Clo.* Advocate's the court-word for a pheasant; say, you have none.

*Shep.* None, sir; I have no pheasant, cock, nor hen.

*Aut.* How blest are we, that are not simple men! Yet nature might have made me as these are, Therefore I'll not disdain.

*Clo.* This cannot be but a great courtier.

*Shep.* His garments are rich, but he wears them not handsomely.

*Clo.* He seems to be the more noble in being fantastical; a great man, I'll warrant; I know, by the pickin' on's teeth

*Aut.* I ne farne there? what's i'th' fardel?

Wherefore that box?

*Shep.* Sir, there lies such secrets in this fardel, and box, which none must know but the king; and which he shall know within this hour, if I may come to the speech of him.

*Aut.* Age, thou hast lost thy labour.

*Shep.* Why, sir?

*Aut.* The king is not at the palace; he is gone aboard a new ship to purge melancholy, and air himself: For, if thou be'st capable of things serious, thou must know, the king is full of grief.

*Shep.* So 'tis said, sir; about his son, that should have married a shepherd's daughter.

*Aut.* If that shepherd be not in hand-fast, let him fly; the curses he shall have, the tortures he shall feel, will break the back of man, the heart of monster.

*Clo.* Think you so, sir?

*Aut.* Not he alone shall suffer what wit can make heavy, and vengeance bitter; but those that are germane to him, though removed fifty times, shall all come under the hangman: which though it be great pity, yet it is necessary. An old sheep-whistling rogue, a ram-tender, to offer to have his daughter come into grace! Some say, he shall be stoned; but that death is too soft for him, say I: Draw our throne into a sheep-cote! all deaths are too few, the sharpest too easy.

*Clo.* Has the old man e'er a son, sir, do you hear, an't like you, sir?

*Aut.* He has a son, who shall be flayed alive; then, 'nointed over with honey, set on the head of a wasp's nest; then stand, till he be three quarters and a dram dead: then recovered again with aqua-vitæ, or some other hot infusion: then, raw as he is, and in the hottest day prognostication proclaims, shall he be set against a brick-wall, the sun looking with a southward eye upon him; where he is to behold him, with flies blown to death. But what talk we of these traitorly rascals, whose miseries are to be smiled at, their offences being so capital? Tell me, (for you seem to be honest plain men,) what you have to the king: being something gently considered, I'll bring you where he is aboard, tender your persons to his presence, whisper him in your behalfs; and, if it be in man, besides the king to effect your suits, here is man shall do it.

*Clo.* He seems to be of great authority: close with him, give him gold; and though authority be a stubborn bear, yet he is oft led by the nose with gold: show the inside of your purse to the outside of his hand, and no more ado: Remember stoned, and flayed alive.

*Shep.* An't please you, sir, to undertake the business for us, here is that gold I have: I'll make it as much more; and leave this young man in pawn, till I bring it you.

*Aut.* After I have done what I promised?

*Shep.* Ay, sir.

*Aut.* Well, give me the moiety:—Are you a party in this business?

*Clo.* In some sort, sir: but though my case be a pitiful one, I hope I shall not be flayed out of it.

*Aut.* O, that's the case of the shepherd's son :—  
Hang him, he'll be made an example.

*Clo.* Comfort, good comfort : we must to the king,  
and show our strange sights : he must know, 'tis none  
of your daughter nor my sister ; we are gone else. Sir,  
I will give you as much as this old man does, when the  
business is performed ; and remain, as he says, your  
pawn, till it be brought you.

*Aut.* I will trust you. Walk before toward the sea-  
side ; go on the right hand ; I will but look upon the  
hedge, and follow you.

*Clo.* We are blessed in this man, as I may say, even  
blessed.

*Shep.* Let's before, as he bids us : he was provided  
to do us good. [*Exeunt Shepherd and Clown.*]

*Aut.* If I had a mind to be honest, I see, fortune  
would not suffer me ; she drops booties in my mouth.  
I am courted now with a double occasion ; gold, and  
a means to do the prince my master good ; which  
who knows how that may turn back to my advan-  
cement ? I will bring these two moles, these blind ones,  
aboard him : if he think it fit to shore them again,  
and that the complaint they have to the king concerns  
him nothing, let him call me, rogue, for being so far  
officious ; for I am proof against that title, and what  
shame else belongs to't : To him will I present them ;  
there may be matter in it. [*Exit.*]

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—Sicilia. *A room in the palace of Leontes.*

*Enter LEONTES, CLEOMENES, DION, PAULINA,  
and others.*

*Cleo.* Sir, you have done enough, and have perform'd  
A saint-like sorrow: no fault could you make,  
Which you have not redeem'd; indeed, paid down  
More penitence, than done trespass: At the last,  
Do, as the heavens have done; forget your evil;  
With them, forgive yourself.

*Leon.* Whilst I remember  
Her, and her virtues, I cannot forget  
My blemishes in them; and so still think of  
The wrong I did myself: which was so much,  
That heirless it hath made my kingdom; and  
Destroy'd the sweet'st companion, that e'er man  
Bred his hopes out of.

*Paul.* True, too true, my lord:  
If, one by one, you wedded all the world,  
Or, from the all that are, took something good,  
To make a perfect woman; she, you kill'd,  
Would be unparallel'd.

*Leon.* I think so. Kill'd!  
She I kill'd? I did so: but thou strik'st me  
Sorely, to say I did; it is as bitter  
Upon thy tongue, as in my thought: Now, good now,  
Say so but seldom.

*Cleo.* Not at all, good lady:  
You might have spoken a thousand things that would

Have done the time more benefit, and grac'd  
Your kindness better.

*Paul.* You are one of those,  
Would have him wed again.

*Dion.* If you would not so,  
You pity not the state, nor the remembrance  
Of his most sovereign dame; consider little,  
What dangers, by his highness' fail of issue,  
May drop upon his kingdom, and devour  
Uncertain lookers-on. What were more holy,  
Than to rejoice, the former queen is well?  
What holier, than,—for royalty's repair,  
For present comfort and for future good,—  
To bless the bed of majesty again  
With a sweet fellow to 't?

*Paul.* There is none worthy,  
Respecting her that's gone. Besides, the gods  
Will have fulfill'd their secret purposes:  
For has not the divine Apollo said,  
Is't not the tenour of his oracle,  
That king Leontes shall not have an heir,  
Till his lost child be found? which, that it shall,  
Is all as monstrous to our human reason,  
As my Antigonus to break his grave,  
And come again to me; who, on my life,  
Did perish with the infant. 'Tis your counsel,  
My lord should to the heavens be contrary,  
Oppose against their wills.—Care not for issue;

[To LEONTES.]

The crown will find an heir: Great Alexander  
Left his to th' worthiest; so his successor  
Was like to be the best.

*Leon.* Good Paulina,—

Who hast the memory of Hermione,  
 I know, in honour,—O, that ever I  
 Had squar'd me to thy counsel!—then, even now,  
 I might have look'd upon my queen's full eyes;  
 Have taken treasure from her lips,—

*Paul.* And left them  
 More rich, for what they yielded.

*Leon.* Thou speak'st truth.  
 No more such wives; therefore, no wife: one worse,  
 And better us'd, would make her sainted spirit  
 Again possess her corps; and, on this stage,  
 (Where we offenders now appear,) soul-vex'd,  
 Begin, *And why to me?*

*Paul.* Had she such power,  
 She had just cause.

*Leon.* She had; and would incense me  
 To murder her I married.

*Paul.* I should so:  
 Were I the ghost that walk'd, I'd bid you mark  
 Her eye; and tell me, for what dull part in't  
 You chose her: then I'd shriek, that even your ears  
 Should rift to hear me; and the words that fol-  
 low'd

Should be, *Remember mine.*

*Leon.* Stars, very stars,  
 And all eyes else dead coals!—fear thou no wife,  
 I'll have no wife, Paulina.

*Paul.* Will you swear  
 Never to marry, but by my free leave?

*Leon.* Never, Paulina; so be bless'd my spirit!

*Paul.* Then, good my lords, bear witness to his oath.

*Cleo.* You tempt him over-much.

*Paul.* Unless another,

As like Hermione as is her picture,  
Affront his eye.

*Cleo.* Good madam,—

*Paul.* I have done.

Yet, if my lord will marry,—if you will, sir,  
No remedy, but you will; give me the office  
To choose you a queen: she shall not be so young  
As was your former; but she shall be such,  
As, walk'd your first queen's ghost, it should take joy  
To see her in your arms.

*Leon.* My true Paulina,

We shall not marry, till thou bidd'st us.

*Paul.* That

Shall be, when your first queen's again in breath;  
Never till then.

*Enter a Gentleman.*

*Gent.* One that gives out himself prince Florizel,  
Son of Polixenes, with his princess, (she  
The fairest I have yet beheld,) desires access  
To your high presence.

*Leon.* What with him? he comes not

Like to his father's greatness: his approach,  
So out of circumstance, and sudden, tells us,  
'Tis not a visitation fram'd, but forc'd  
By need, and accident. What train?

*Gent.* But few,

And those but mean.

*Leon.* His princess, say you, with him?

*Gent.* Ay; the most peerless piece of earth, I think,  
That e'er the sun shone bright on.

*Paul.* O Hermione,

As every present time doth boast itself



Above a better, gone ; so must thy grave  
 Give way to what's seen now. Sir, you yourself  
 Have said, and writ so, (but your writing now  
 Is colder than that theme,) *She had not been,*  
*Nor was not to be equalled ;*—thus your verse  
 Flow'd with her beauty once ; 'tis shrewdly ebb'd,  
 To say, you have seen a better.

*Gent.* Pardon, madam :

The one I have almost forgot ; (your pardon,)  
 The other, when she has obtain'd your eye,  
 Will have your tongue too. This is such a creature,  
 Would she begin a sect, might quench the zeal  
 Of all professors else ; make proselytes  
 Of who she but bid follow.

*Paul.* How ? not women ?

*Gent.* Women will love her, that she is a woman  
 More worth than any man ; men, that she is  
 The rarest of all women.

*Leon.* Go, Cleomenes ;

Yourself, assisted with your honour'd friends,  
 Bring them to our embracement.—Still 'tis strange,  
 [Exit CLEOMENES, Lords, and Gentleman.  
 He thus should steal upon us.

*Paul.* Had our prince,  
 (Jewel of children,) seen this hour, he had pair'd  
 Well with this lord ; there was not full a month  
 Between their births.

*Leon.* Pr'ythee, no more ; thou know'st,  
 He dies to me again, when talk'd of : sure,  
 When I shall see this gentleman, thy speeches  
 Will bring me to consider that, which may  
 Unfurnish me of reason.—They are come.—

*Re-enter CLEOMENES, with FLORIZEL, PERDITA, and Attendants.*

Your mother was most true to wedlock, prince;  
 For she did print your royal father off,  
 Conceiving you : Were I but twenty-one,  
 Your father's image is so hit in you,  
 His very air, that I should call you brother,  
 As I did him ; and speak of something, wildly  
 By us perform'd before. Most dearly welcome !  
 And your fair princess, goddess !—O, alas !  
 I lost a couple, that 'twixt heaven and earth  
 Might thus have stood, begetting wonder, as  
 You, gracious couple, do ! and then I lost  
 (All mine own folly,) the society,  
 Amity too, of your brave father ; whom,  
 Though bearing misery, I desire my life  
 Once more to look upon.

*Flo.*

By his command  
 Have I here touch'd Sicilia : and from him  
 Give you all greetings, that a king, at friend,  
 Can send his brother : and, but infirmity  
 (Which waits upon worn times,) hath something seiz'd  
 His wish'd ability, he had himself  
 The lands and waters 'twixt your throne and his  
 Measur'd, to look upon you ; whom he loves  
 (He bade me say so,) more than all the scepters,  
 And those that bear them, living.

*Leon.*

O, my brother,  
 (Good gentleman !) the wrongs I have done thee, stir  
 Afresh within me ; and these thy offices,  
 So rarely kind, are as interpreters

Of my behind-hand slackness!—Welcome hither,  
 As is the spring to th'earth. And hath he too  
 Expos'd this paragon to the fearful usage  
 (At least, ungentle,) of the dreadful Neptune,  
 To greet a man, not worth her pains; much less  
 The adventure of her person?

*Flo.*

Good my lord,

She came from Libya.

*Leon.*

Where the warlike Smalus,

That noble honour'd lord, is fear'd, and lov'd?

*Flo.* Most royal sir, from thence; from him, whose  
 daughter

His tears proclaim'd his, parting with her: thence  
 (A prosperous south-wind friendly,) we have cross'd,  
 To execute the charge my father gave me,  
 For visiting your highness: My best train  
 I have from your Sicilian shores dismiss'd;  
 Who for Bohemia bend, to signify  
 Not only my success in Libya, sir,  
 But my arrival, and my wife's, in safety  
 Here, where we are.

*Leon.*

The blessed gods

Purge all infection from our air, whilst you  
 Do climate here! You have a holy father,  
 A graceful gentleman; against whose person,  
 So sacred as it is, I have done sin:  
 For which the heavens, taking angry note,  
 Have left me issueless; and your father's bless'd,  
 (As he from heav'n merits it,) with you,  
 Worthy his goodness. What might I have been,  
 Might I a son and daughter now have look'd on,  
 Such goodly things as you?

*Enter a Lord,*

*Lord.* Most noble sir,  
That, which I shall report, will bear no credit,  
Were not the proof so nigh. Please you, great  
sir,

Bohemia greets you from himself, by me :  
Desires you to attach his son ; who has  
(His dignity and duty both cast off,)  
Fled from his father, from his hopes, and with  
A shepherd's daughter.

*Leon.* Where's Bohemia ? speak.

*Lord.* Here in the city ; I now came from him :  
I speak amazedly ; and it becomes  
My marvel, and my message. To your court  
Whiles he was hast'ning, (in the chase, it seems,  
Of this fair couple,) meets he on the way  
The father of this seeming lady, and  
Her brother, having both their country quitted  
With this young prince.

*Flo.* Camillo has betrayed me ;  
Whose honour, and whose honesty, till now,  
Endur'd all weathers.

*Lord.* Lay't so, to his charge ;  
He's with the king your father.

*Leon.* Who ? Camillo ?

*Lord.* Camillo, sir ; I spake with him ; who now  
Has these poor men in question. Never saw I  
Wretches so quake : they kneel, they kiss the earth ;  
Forswear themselves as often as they speak :  
Bohemia stops his ears, and threatens them  
With divers deaths in death.

*Per.* O, my poor father !—

The heaven sets spies upon us, will not have  
Our contract celebrated.

*Leon.* You are married?

*Flo.* We are not, sir, nor are we like to be;  
The stars, I see, will kiss the valleys first:—  
The odds for high and low's alike.

*Leon.* My lord,  
Is this the daughter of a king?

*Flo.* She is,  
When once she is my wife.

*Leon.* That once, I see, by your good father's speed,  
Will come on very slowly. I am sorry,  
Most sorry, you have broken from his liking,  
Where you were tied in duty: and as sorry,  
Your choice is not so rich in worth as beauty,  
That you might well enjoy her.

*Flo.* Dear, look up:  
Though fortune, visible an enemy,  
Should chase us, with my father; power no jot  
Hath she, to change our loves.—Beseech you, sir,  
Remember since you ow'd no more to time  
Than I do now: with thought of such affections,  
Step forth mine advocate; at your request,  
My father will grant precious things, as trifles.

*Leon.* Would he do so, I'd beg your precious mistress,  
Which he counts but a trifle.

*Paul.* Sir, my liege,  
Your eye hath too much youth in't: not a month  
'Fore your queen died, she was more worth such gazes  
Than what you look on now.

*Leon.* I thought of her,  
Even in these looks I made.—But your petition

[To FLORENCE.]

Is yet unanswer'd : I will to your father ;  
 Your honour not o'erthrown by your desires,  
 I am a friend to them, and you : upon which errand  
 I now go toward him ; therefore, follow me,  
 And mark what way I make : Come, good my lord.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*The same. Before the palace.*

*Enter AUTOLYCUS and a Gentleman.*

*Aut.* 'Beseech you, sir, were you present at this relation ?

*1 Gent.* I was by at the opening of the fardel, heard the old shepherd deliver the manner how he found it : whereupon, after a little amazedness, we were all commanded out of the chamber ; only this, methought I heard the shepherd say, he found the child.

*Aut.* I would most gladly know the issue of it.

*1 Gent.* I make a broken delivery of the business ;—  
 But the changes I perceived in the king, and Camillo, were very notes of admiration : they seemed almost, with staring on one another, to tear the cases of their eyes ; there was speech in their dumbness, language in their very gesture ; they looked, as they had heard of a world ransomed, or one destroyed : A notable passion of wonder appeared in them : but the wisest beholder, that knew no more but seeing, could not say, if the importance were joy, or sorrow : but in the extremity of the one, it must needs be.

*Enter another Gentleman.*

Here comes a gentleman, that, happily, knows more :  
 The news, Rogero ?

2 *Gent.* Nothing but bonfires : The oracle is fulfilled ; the king's daughter is found : such a deal of wonder is broken out within this hour, that ballad-makers cannot be able to express it.

*Enter a third Gentleman.*

Here comes the lady Paulina's steward ; he can deliver you more.—How goes it now, sir ? this news, which is called true, is so like an old tale, that the verity of it is in strong suspicion : Has the king found his heir ?

3 *Gent.* Most true ; if ever truth were pregnant by circumstance : that, which you hear, you'll swear you see, there is such unity in the proofs. The mantle of queen Hermione :—her jewel about the neck of it :—the letters of Antigonus, found with it, which they know to be his character :—the majesty of the creature, in resemblance of the mother ;—the affection of nobleness, which nature shows above her breeding,—and many other evidences, proclaim her, with all certainty, to be the king's daughter. Did you see the meeting of the two kings ?

2 *Gent.* No.

3 *Gent.* Then have you lost a sight, which was to be seen, cannot be spoken of. There might you have beheld one joy crown another ; so, and in such manner, that, it seemed, sorrow wept to take leave of them ; for their joy waded in tears. There was casting up of eyes, holding up of hands ; with countenance of such distraction, that they were to be known by garment, not by favour. Our king, being ready to leap out of himself for joy of his found daughter ; as if that joy were now become a loss, cries, *O, thy mother, thy mother !* then asks Bohemia forgiveness ; then embraces

his son-in-law ; then again worries he his daughter, with clipping her ; now he thanks the old shepherd, which stands by, like a weather-bitten conduit of many kings' reigns. I never heard of such another encounter, which lames report to follow it, and undoes description to do it.

2 *Gent.* What, pray you, became of Antigonus, that carried hence the child ?

3 *Gent.* Like an old tale still ; which will have matter to rehearse, though credit be asleep, and not an ear open : He was torn to pieces with a bear : this avouches the shepherd's son ; who has not only his innocence (which seems much,) to justify him, but a handkerchief, and rings, of his, that Paulina knows.

1 *Gent.* What became of his bark, and his followers ?

3 *Gent.* Wrecked, the same instant of their master's death ; and in the view of the shepherd : so that all the instruments, which aided to expose the child, were even then lost, when it was found. But, O, the noble combat, that, 'twixt joy and sorrow, was fought in Paulina ! She had one eye declined for the loss of her husband ; another elevated that the oracle was fulfilled : She lifted the princess from the earth ; and so locks her in embracing, as if she would pin her to her heart, that she might no more be in danger of losing.

1 *Gent.* The dignity of this act was worth the audience of kings and princes ; for by such was it acted.

3 *Gent.* One of the prettiest touches of all, and that which angled for mine eyes (caught the water, though not the fish,) was, when at the relation of the queen's death, with the manner how she came to it, (bravely confessed, and lamented by the king,) how attentiveness wounded his daughter : till, from one sign of



dolour to another, she did, with an *alas!* I would fain say, bleed tears; for, I am sure, my heart wept blood. Who was most marble there, changed colour; some swooned, all sorrowed: if all the world could have seen it, the woe had been universal.

1 *Gent.* Are they returned to the court?

3 *Gent.* No: the princess hearing of her mother's statue, which is in the keeping of Paulina,—a piece many years in doing, and now newly performed by that rare Italian master, Julio Romano; who, had he himself eternity, and could put breath into his work, would beguile nature of her custom, so perfectly he is her ape: he so near to Hermione hath done Hermione, that, they say, one would speak to her, and stand in hope of answer: thither with all greediness of affection, are they gone; and there they intend to sup.

1 *Gent.* I thought, she had some great matter there in hand; for she hath privately, twice or thrice a day, ever since the death of Hermione, visited that removed house. Shall we thither, and with our company piece the rejoicing?

1 *Gent.* Who would be thence, that has the benefit of access? every wink of an eye, some new grace will be born: our absence makes us unthrifty to our knowledge. Let's along. [*Exeunt* Gentlemen.

*Aut.* Now, had I not the dash of my former life in me, would preferment drop on my head. I brought the old man and his son aboard the prince; told him, I heard him talk of a fardel, and I know not what: but he at that time, over-fond of the shepherd's daughter, (so he then took her to be,) who began to be much sea-sick, and himself little better, extremity of weather continuing, this mystery remained undiscover'd.

vered. But 'tis all one to me: for had I been the finder-out of this secret, it would not have relished among my other discredits.

*Enter Shepherd and Clown.*

Here come those I have done good to against my will, and already appearing in the blossoms of their fortune.

*Shep.* Come, boy; I am past more children; but thy sons and daughters will be all gentlemen born.

*Clo.* You are well met, sir: You denied to fight with me this other day, because I was no gentleman born: See you these clothes? say, you see them not, and think me still no gentleman born: you were best say, these robes are not gentlemen born. Give me the lie; do; and try whether I am not now a gentleman born.

*Aut.* I know, you are now, sir, a gentleman born.

*Clo.* Ay, and have been so any time these four hours.

*Shep.* And so have I, boy.

*Clo.* So you have:—but I was a gentleman born before my father: for the king's son took me by the hand, and called me, brother; and then the two kings called my father, brother; and then the prince, my brother, and the princess, my sister, called my father, father; and so we wept: and there was the first gentleman-like tears that ever we shed.

*Shep.* We may live, son, to shed many more.

*Clo.* Ay; or else 'twere hard luck, being in so posterous estate as we are.

*Aut.* I humbly beseech you, sir, to pardon me all the faults I have committed to your worship, and to give me your good report to the prince my master.

*Shep.* 'Pr'ythee, son, do; for we must be gentle, now we are gentlemen.

*Clo.* Thou wilt amend thy life?

*Aut.* Ay, an it like your good worship.

*Clo.* Give me thy hand: I will swear to the prince, thou art as honest a true fellow as any is in Bohemia.

*Shep.* You may say it, but not swear it.

*Clo.* Not swear it, now I am a gentleman? Let boors and franklins say it, I'll swear it.

*Shep.* How if it be false, son?

*Clo.* If it be ne'er so false, a true gentleman may swear it, in the behalf of his friend:—And I'll swear to the prince, thou art a tall fellow of thy hands, and that thou wilt not be drunk; but I know, thou art no tall fellow of thy hands, and that thou wilt be drunk; but I'll swear it: and I would, thou would'st be a tall fellow of thy hands.

*Aut.* I will prove so, sir, to my power.

*Clo.* Ay, by any means prove a tall fellow: If I do not wonder, how thou darest venture to be drunk, not being a tall fellow, trust me not.—Hark! the kings and the princes, our kindred, are going to see the queen's picture. Come, follow us: we'll be thy good masters. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—*The same. A room in Paulina's house.*

*Enter* LEONTES, POLIXENES, FLORIZEL, PERDITA, CAMILLO, PAULINA, Lords, and Attendants.

*Leon.* O grave and good Paulina, the great comfort That I have had of thee!

*Paul.* What, sovereign sir,  
I did not well, I meant well: All my services,

You have paid home : but that you have vouchsaf'd  
 With your crown'd brother, and these your contracted  
 Heirs of your kingdoms, my poor house to visit,  
 It is a surplus of your grace, which never  
 My life may last to answer.

*Leon.*

O Paulina,

We honour you with trouble : But we came  
 To see the statue of our queen : your gallery  
 Have we pass'd through, not without much content  
 In many singularities ; but we saw not  
 That which my daughter came to look upon,  
 The statue of her mother.

*Paul.*

As she liv'd peerless,

So her dead likeness, I do well believe,  
 Excels whatever yet you look'd upon,  
 Or hand of man hath done ; therefore I keep it  
 Lonely, apart : But here it is : prepare  
 To see the life as lively mock'd, as ever  
 Still sleep mock'd death : behold ; and say, 'tis well.

[PAULINA undraws a curtain, and discovers a statue.

I like your silence, it the more shows off  
 Your wonder : But yet speak ;—first, you, my liege.  
 Comes it not something near?

*Leon.*

Her natural posture!—

Chide me, dear stone ; that I may say, indeed,  
 Thou art Hermione : or, rather, thou art she,  
 In thy not chiding ; for she was as tender,  
 As infancy, and grace.—But yet, Paulina,  
 Hermione was not so much wrinkled ; nothing  
 So aged, as this seems.

*Pol.*

O, not by much.

*Paul.* So much the more our carver's excellence ;

Which lets go by some sixteen years, and makes her  
As she liv'd now.

*Leon.* As now she might have done,  
So much to my good comfort, as it is  
Now piercing to my soul. O, thus she stood,  
Even with such life of majesty, (warm life,  
As now it coldly stands,) when first I woo'd her!  
I am asham'd: Does not the stone rebuke me,  
For being more stone than it?—O, royal piece,  
There's magick in thy majesty; which has  
My evils conjur'd to remembrance; and  
From thy admiring daughter took the spirits,  
Standing like stone with thee!

*Per.* And give me leave;  
And do not say, 'tis superstition, that  
I kneel, and then implore her blessing.—Lady,  
Dear queen, that ended when I but began,  
Give me that hand of yours, to kiss.

*Paul.* O, patience;  
The statue is but newly fix'd, the colour's  
Not dry.

*Cam.* My lord, your sorrow was too sore laid on;  
Which sixteen winters cannot blow away,  
So many summers, dry: scarce any joy  
Did ever so long live; no sorrow,  
But kill'd itself much sooner.

*Pol.* Dear my brother,  
Let him, that was the cause of this, have power  
To take off so much grief from you, as he  
Will piece up in himself.

*Paul.* Indeed, my lord,  
If I had thought, the sight of my poor infage

Would thus have wrought you, (for the stone is mine,)  
I'd not have show'd it.

*Leon.* Do not draw the curtain.

*Paul.* No longer shall you gaze on't; lest your fancy  
May think anon, it moves.

*Leon.* Let be, let be.

Would I were dead, but that, methinks, already—  
What was he, that did make it?—See, my lord,  
Would you not deem, it breath'd? and that those  
veins

Did verily bear blood?

*Pol.* Masterly done:

The very life seems warm upon her lip.

*Leon.* The fixure of her eye has motion in't,  
As we are mock'd with art.

*Paul.* I'll draw the curtain;

My lord's almost so far transported, that  
He'll think anon, it lives.

*Leon.* O sweet Paulina,

Make me to think so twenty years together;  
No settled senses of the world can match  
The pleasure of that madness. Let't alone.

*Paul.* I am sorry, sir, I have thus far stirr'd you:  
but

I could afflict you further.

*Leon.* Do, Paulina;

For this affliction has a taste as sweet  
As any cordial comfort.—Still, methinks,  
There is an air comes from her: What fine chizzel  
Could ever yet cut breath? Let no man mock me,  
For I will kiss her.

*Paul.* Good my lord, forbear:

The ruddiness upon her lip is wet;

You'll mar it, if you kiss it; stain your own  
With oily painting: Shall I draw the curtain?

*Leon.* No, not these twenty years.

*Per.* So long could I  
Stand by, a looker on.

*Paul.* Either forbear,  
Quit presently the chapel; or resolve you  
For more amazement: If you can behold it,  
I'll make the statue move indeed; descend,  
And take you by the hand: but then you'll think,  
(Which I protest against,) I am assisted  
By wicked powers.

*Leon.* What you can make her do,  
I am content to look on: what to speak,  
I am content to hear; for 'tis as easy  
To make her speak, as move.

*Paul.* It is requir'd,  
You do awake your faith: Then, all stand still;  
Or those, that think it is unlawful business  
I am about, let them depart.

*Leon.* Proceed;  
No foot shall stir.

*Paul.* Musick; awake her: strike.—

[*Musick.*

'Tis time; descend; be stone no more: approach;  
Strike all that look upon with marvel. Come;  
I'll fill your grave up: stir; nay, come away;  
Bequeath to death your numbness, for from him  
Dear life redeems you.—You perceive, she stirs:

[*HERMIONE comes down from the pedestal.*

Start not: her actions shall be holy, as,  
You hear, my spell is lawful: do not shun her,  
Until you see her die again; for then

You kill her double: Nay, present your hand:  
When she was young, you woo'd her; now, in age,  
Is she become the suitor.

*Leon.* O, she's warm! [*Embracing her.*]  
If this be magick, let it be an art  
Lawful as eating.

*Pol.* She embraces him.

*Cam.* She hangs about his neck;  
If she pertain to life, let her speak too.

*Pol.* Ay, and make 't manifest where she has liv'd,  
Or, how stol'n from the dead?

*Paul.* That she is living,  
Were it but told you, should be hooted at  
Like an old tale; but it appears, she lives,  
Though yet she speak not. Mark a little while.—  
Please you to interpose, fair madam; kneel,  
And pray your mother's blessing.—Turn, good lady;  
Our Perdita is found.

[*Presenting PERDITA, who kneels to HERMIONE.*]

*Her.* You gods, look down,  
And from your sacred vials pour your graces  
Upon my daughter's head!—Tell me, mine own,  
Where hast thou been preserv'd? where liv'd? how  
found

Thy father's court? for thou shalt hear, that I,—  
Knowing by Paulina, that the oracle  
Gave hope thou wast in being,—have preserv'd  
Myself, to see the issue.

*Paul.* There's time enough for that;  
Lest they desire, upon this push to trouble  
Your joys with like relation.—Go together,  
You precious winners all; your exultation  
Partake to every one. I, an old turtle,



Will wing me to some wither'd bough; and there  
My mate, that's never to be found again,  
Lament till I am lost.

*Leon.* O peace, Paulina;  
Thou should'st a husband take by my consent,  
As I by thine, a wife: this is a match,  
And made between's by vows. Thou hast found mine;  
But how, is to be question'd: for I saw her,  
As I thought, dead; and have, in vain, said many  
A prayer upon her grave: I'll not seek far  
(For him, I partly know his mind,) to find thee  
An honourable husband:—Come, Camillo,  
And take her by the hand: whose worth, and honesty,  
Is richly noted; and here justified  
By us, a pair of kings.—Let's from this place.—  
What?—Look upon my brother:—both your pardons,  
That e'er I put between your holy looks  
My ill suspicion.—This your son-in-law,  
And son unto the king, (whom heavens directing,)  
Is troth-plight to your daughter.—Good Paulina,  
Lead us from hence; where we may leisurely  
Each one demand, and answer to his part  
Perform'd in this wide gap of time, since first  
We were dissever'd: Hastily lead away. [*Exeunt.*]

ANNOTATIONS  
ON  
THE WINTER'S TALE.

ACT I.

LINE 18. —our entertainment, &c.] Though we cannot give you equal entertainment, yet the consciousness of our good-will shall justify us. JOHNSON.

Line 28. —royally attorned,] Nobly supplied by substitution of embassies, &c. JOHNSON.

Line 40. —physicks the subject,] Affords a cordial to the state; has the power of assuaging the sense of misery. JOHNSON.

Line 63. —sneaping winds—] i. e. nipping.

— 90. —this satisfaction—] We had satisfactory accounts yesterday of the state of Bohemia. JOHNSON.

Line 102. —behind the gest—] In the time of royal progresses, the king's stages, as we may see by the journals of them in the herald's office, were called his gests; from the old French word *giste*, *diversorium*. WARBURTON.

Line 103. —yet good deed,] signifies indeed, in very deed, as Shakspeare in another place expresses it. STEEVENS.

Line 144. —the imposition clear'd,  
*Hereditary ours;*] i. e. setting aside *original*  
 sin; bating the imposition from the offence of our first  
 parents, we might have boldly protested our innocence to  
 heaven. WARBURTON.

Line 153. Grace to boot!  
*Of this make no conclusion; lest you say, &c.]*  
 each part of this observation the queen answers in order.  
 To that of *temptations* she replies, *Grace to boot!* i. e. though  
 temptations have grown up, yet I hope grace too has kept  
 pace with them. *Grace to boot*, was a proverbial expression  
 on these occasions. WARBURTON.

Line 185. *And clap thyself my love;*] She open'd her hand,  
 to clap the palm of it into his, as people do when they con-  
 firm a bargain. Hence the phrase—to clap up a bargain, i. e.  
 make one with no other ceremony than the junction of  
 hands. STEEVENS.

Line 202. *The mort o' the deer;*] A lesson upon the horn  
 at the death of the deer. THEOBALD.

Line 206. *I'fecks!*] Now pronounced *I'fegs—in faith.*

— 207. —bawcock.] *Bawcock* is a fine fellow.

— 210. *We must be neat;*] Leontes, seeing his son's  
 nose smutted, cries *we must be neat*, then recollecting that  
*neat* is the term for horned cattle, he says, *not neat, but cleanly.*  
JOHNSON.

Line 212. —still virginaling—] Still playing with her  
 fingers, as a girl playing on the *virginals*. JOHNSON.

A *virginal*, as I am informed, is a very small kind of spin-  
 net. Queen Elizabeth's *virginal book* is yet in being, and  
 many of the lessons in it have proved so difficult, as to haffle  
 our most expert players on the harpsichord. STEEVENS.

Line 223. *No bourn—]* *Bourn* is *limit, boundary.*

— 225. —welkin-eye:] *Blue eye*; an eye of the same  
 colour with the *welkin*, or *sky*. JOHNSON.

Line 255. *Will you take eggs for money?*] This seems to be a proverbial expression, used when a man sees himself wronged and makes no resistance. Its original, or precise meaning, I cannot find, but I believe it means, will you be a *cuckold* for hire. The cuckow is reported to lay her eggs in another bird's nest; he therefore that has eggs laid in his nest, is said to be *cucullatus*, *cuckow'd*, or *cuckold*. JOHNSON.

Line 357. —*hoxes honesty behind,*] *To hox*, is to *hough*, to cut the hamstrings.

Line 448. *I have lov'd thee, &c.*] Camillo, desirous to defend the queen, and willing to secure credit to his apology, begins, by telling the king that *he has loved him*, is about to give instances of his love, and to infer from them his present zeal, when he is interrupted. JOHNSON.

Line 554. *I am appointed Him to murder you.*] i. e. I am the person appointed to murder you. STEEVENS.

Line 561. *To vice you to 't,*] The *vice* is an instrument well known; its operation is to hold things together. So the bailiff speaking of Falstaff, "*If he come but within my vice,*" &c. STEEVENS.

Line 571: *Swear his thought over*

*By each particular star in Heaven, &c.*] May, perhaps mean, *overcome his present persuasion*, that is, endeavour to overcome his opinion, by swearing oaths numerous as the stars. JOHNSON.

Line 608. *Good expedition be my friend, and comfort*

*The gracious queen, part of his theme, but nothing Of his ill-ta'en suspicion!*] Jealousy is a passion compounded of love and suspicion, this passion is the *theme* or subject of the king's thoughts.—Polixenes, perhaps, wishes the queen, for her comfort, so much of that *theme* or subject as is good, but deprecates that which causes misery. May part of the king's present sentiments comfort the queen, but away with his suspicion. JOHNSON.

## ACT II.

Line 58. *Alack, for lesser knowledge !]* That is, *O that my knowledge were less.* JOHNSON.

Line 190. —land-damn him ;] *Land-damn* is probably one of those words which caprice brought into fashion, and which, after a short time, reason and grammar drove irrecoverably away. It perhaps meant no more than I will *rid the country* of him ; *condemn* him to quit the *land*. JOHNSON.

Line 197. *And I had rather glib myself, &c.]* For *glib* I think we should read *lib*, which in the northern language, is the same with *geld*. GREY.

Though *lib* may probably be the right word, yet *glib* is at this time current in many counties, where they say — *to glib a boar, to glib a horse.* STEEVENS.

Line 251. *Lest that the treachery of the two, &c.]* He has before declared, that there is a *plot against his life and crown*, and that *Hermione is federary* with *Polixenes* and *Camillo*.

JOHNSON.

Line 294. *These dangerous, unsafe lunes o' the king !]* There is a mode of expression with the French — *Il y a de la lune : i. e.* He has got the moon in his head ; he is frantick.

THEOBALD.

Line 343. ———— *out of the blank*

*And level of my brain,]* Beyond the aim of any attempt that I can make against him. *Blank* and *level* are terms of archery.

JOHNSON.

Line 424. *A mankind witch !]* A *mankind* woman, is yet used in the midland counties, for a woman violent, ferocious, and mischievous. It has the same sense in this passage. Witches are supposed to be *mankind*, to put off the softness and delicacy of women, therefore Sir Hugh, in the *Merry Wives of Windsor*, says, of a woman suspected to be a witch, *that he does not like when a woman has a beard.* JOHNSON.

Line 433. —*thou art a woman-tir'd* ;] *Woman-tir'd*, is pecked by a woman. STEEVENS.

Line 436. —*thy crone*.] i. e. thy old worn-out woman. STEEVENS.

— 438 *Unvenerable be thy hands, if thou*

*Tak'st up the princess, by that forced baseness*—]

Leontes had ordered Antigonus to *take up the bastard*, Paulina forbids him to touch the princess under that appellation. *Forced* is *false*, uttered with violence to truth.

JOHNSON.

— 478. *And, lozel*,] A *lozel* or *lozel*, is a *sorry* or *worthless fellow*.

Line 564. —*commend it strangely to some place*.] *Commit* to some place, *as a stranger*, without more provision.

JOHNSON.

### ACT III.

Line 2. *Fertile the isle* ;] But the temple of Apollo at Delphi was not in an *island*, but in *Phocis*, on the *continent*. Either Shakspeare, or his editors, had their heads running on Delos, an island of the Cyclades. If it was the editor's blunder, then Shakspeare wrote, *Fertile the soil*,—which is more elegant too, than the present reading. WARBURTON.

Shakspeare is little careful of geography. There is no need of this emendation in a play of which the whole plot depends upon a geographical error, by which Bohemia is supposed to be a maritime country. JOHNSON.

Line 5. *For most it caught me*,] *It* may relate to the whole spectacle. JOHNSON.

Line 47. —*pretence*—] *Is*, in this place, taken for a *scheme laid*, a *design formed* ; to *pretend* means to *design*. in the *Genl. of Verona*. JOHNSON.

Line 72. —*I would spare* ;] To *spare* any thing is to *let it go*, to *quit the possession of it*. JOHNSON.

Line 84. *I ne'er heard yet,  
That any of these bolder vices wanted,  
Less impudence to gainsay what they did,  
Than to perform it first.*]

It is apparent that according to the proper, at least according to the present use of words, *less* should be *more*, or *wanted* should be *had*. But Shakspeare is very uncertain in his use of negatives. It may be necessary once to observe, that in our language two negatives did not originally affirm, but strengthen the negation. This mode of speech was in time changed, but as the change was made in opposition to long custom, it proceeded gradually, and uniformity was not obtained but through an intermediate confusion.

JOHNSON.

Line 114. *My life stands in the level of your dreams,*] To be *in the level* is by a metaphor from archery *to be within the reach*.

JOHNSON.

Line 135. *Starr'd most unluckily,*] i. e. born under an inauspicious planet.

STEEVENS.

Line 220. *Does my deeds make the blacker !*] This vehement retraction of Leontes, accompanied with the confession of more crimes than he was suspected of, is agreeable to our daily experience of the vicissitudes of violent tempers, and the eruptions of minds oppressed with guilt.

JOHNSON.

Line 243. —*though a devil*

*Would have shed water out of fire, ere don't :*] i. e. a devil would have shed tears of pity o'er the damn'd ere he would have committed such an action.

STEEVENS.

Line 275. *I am sorry for't ;*] This is another instance of the sudden changes incident to vehement and ungovernable minds.

JOHNSON.

Line 303. *Thou art perfect then,*] *Perfect* is often used by Shakspeare for *certain, well assured, or well informed*.

JOHNSON.

Line 366. *A savage clamour ?*] This clamour was the cry

of the dogs and hunters ; then seeing the bear, he cries, *this is the chace*, or, the *animal pursued*. JOHNSON.

Line 409. —flap-dragoned it:] i. e. *swallowed it*.

— 427. —a bearing-cloth—] A *bearing-cloth* is the *fine mantle* or *cloth* with which a child is usually covered when it is carried to the church to be baptised. PERCY

Line 430. —some changeling:] i. e. *some child left behind* by the fairies, in the room of one which they had stolen. STEEVENS.

Line 442. —*they are never curst, but when they are hungry:*] *Curst* signifies *malicious*, or *mischievous*.

## ACT IV.

Line 7. —and leave the growth untried

*Of that wide gap;*] *The growth of the wide gap*, is somewhat irregular ; but he means *the growth*, or progression of the time which filled up the *gap* of the story between Perdita's birth and her sixteenth year. *To leave this growth untried*, is *to leave the passages of the intermediate years unnoted and unexamined*. JOHNSON.

Line 8. —*since it is in my power, &c.*] The reasoning of *Time* is not very clear ; he seems to mean, that he who has broke so many laws may now break another ; that he who introduced every thing, may introduce Perdita on her sixteenth year ; and he intreats that he may pass as of old, before any *order* or succession of objects, ancient or modern, distinguished his periods. JOHNSON.

Line 31. *Is the argument of time:*] *Argument* is the same with *subject*. JOHNSON.

Line 68. —*but I have, missingly noted,*] *Missingly* noted, means, I have observed him at *intervals*, not constantly or regularly, but occasionally. STEEVENS.

Line 85. *But, I fear the angle—*] *Angle* in this place means a *fishing-rod*, which he represents as drawing his son like a fish away. STEEVENS.



Line 87. —*some question*—] i. e. *some debate, some talk.*

Line 99. *For the red blood reigns in the winter's pale.*] i. e. the red or *spring* blood now holds dominion o'er those parts lately benumbed by winter.

Line 102. —*pugging tooth*—] Sir T. Hanmer, and after him Dr. Warburton, read, *progging* tooth. It is certain that *pugging* is not now understood. But Dr. Thirlby observes, that this is the cant of gypsies. JOHNSON.

Line 106. —*my aunts,*] *Aunt* appears to have been at this time a cant word for a *baud*. STEEVENS.

Line 109. —*wore three pile;*] *three-pile* was the old name for *rich velvet*.

Line 121. —*With die and drab, I purchased this caparison;*] i. e. with *gaming* and *whoring*, I brought myself to this *shabby dress*. PERCY.

Line 122. —*my revenue is the silly cheat;*] *Silly* is used by the writers of our author's time, for *simple, low, mean*; and in this the humour of the speech consists. I don't aspire to arduous and high things, as *bridewell* or the *gallows*; I am content with this humble and low way of life, as a *snapper-up of unconsidered trifles*. WARBURTON.

Line 123. *Gallows, and knock, &c.*] The resistance which a highwayman encounters in the fact, and the punishment which he suffers on detection, withhold me from daring robbery, and determine me to the silly cheat and petty theft.

JOHNSON.

Line 128. —*tods;*] A *tod* is twenty-eight pounds of wool. PERCY.

Line 137. —*three-man song-men all,*] i. e. singers of catches in three parts. A *six-man-song* occurs in the *Tour-nament of Tottenham*. See *The Rel. of Poetry*, vol. ii. p. 24.

PERCY.

Line 141. —*warden-pies;*] *Wardens* are a species of large pears. I believe the name is disused at present.

STEEVENS.

Line 184. —with trol-my-dames:] *Trou-madame*, French.  
The game of *nine-holes*. WARBURTON.

Line 191. —abide] To *abide*, here, must signify, to  
*sojourn*, to live for a time without a settled habitation.

JOHNSON.

Line 195. —motion of the prodigal son,] i. e. the *puppet-shew*,  
then called *motions*. A term frequently occurring in our au-  
thor. WARBURTON.

Line 222. —let me be unrolled, and my name put in the book  
of virtue!] Begging gypsies, in the time of our author, were  
in gangs and companies, that had something of the shew of  
an incorporated body. From this noble society he wishes  
he may be *unrolled* if he does not so and so. WARBURTON.

Line 225. —hent the stile-a:] *Hent* is from the verb to  
*hend*, to take hold of, to seize.

Line 236. —your extremes,] That is, your *excesses*, the  
*extravagance* of your praises. JOHNSON.

Line 238. *The gracious mark o' the land,*] The *object* of all  
men's *notice* and expectation. JOHNSON.

Line 243. —sworn, I think,

*To show myself a glass.*] i. e. one would think  
that in putting on this habit of a shepherd, you had *sworn*  
to put me out of countenance; for in this, as in a glass, you  
shew me how much below yourself you must descend before  
you can get upon a level with me. The sentiment is fine,  
and expresses all the delicacy, as well as humble modesty  
of the character. WARBURTON.

Line 253. —his work, so noble,

*Vilely bound up!*] It is impossible for any man  
to rid his mind of his profession. The authorship of Shak-  
speare has supplied him with a metaphor, which rather than  
he would lose it, he has put with no great propriety into the  
mouth of a country maid. Thinking of his own works, his  
mind passed naturally to the binder. I am glad that he has  
no hint at an editor. JOHNSON.

Line 318. *Grace, and remembrance,*] *Rue* was called *herb of grace*. *Rosemary* was the emblem of *remembrance*; I know not why, unless because it was carried at funerals.

JOHNSON.

Line 373. ————*violets, dim,*

*But sweeter than the lids of Juno's eyes,*] I suspect that our author mistakes Juno for Pallas, who was the goddess of blue eyes. Sweeter than an *eye-lid* is an odd image: but perhaps he uses *sweet* in the general sense, for *delightful*.

JOHNSON.

It was formerly the fashion to kiss the eyes as a mark of extraordinary tenderness. I have somewhere met with an account of the first reception one of our kings gave to his new queen, where he is said to have *kissed her fayre eyes*.

STEEVENS.

Line 399. — *Each your doing, &c.*] That is, your manner in each act crowns the act.

JOHNSON.

Line 427. — *we stand, &c.*] That is, we are now on our behaviour.

JOHNSON.

Line 434. — *a worthy feeding:*] I conceive *feeding* to be a *pasture*, and a *worthy feeding* to be a tract of pasturage not inconsiderable, not unworthy of my daughter's fortune.

JOHNSON.

Line 436. *He looks like sooth:*] *Sooth* is an obsolete word for *truth*.

Line 462. — *fadings:*] A *dance* so called.

— 496. — *poking-sticks of steel,*] The *poking-sticks* were heated in the fire, and made use of to adjust the plaits of ruffs.

STEEVENS.

Line 518. — *clamour your tongues,*] The phrase is taken from ringing. When bells are at the height, in order to cease them, the repetition of the strokes becomes much quicker than before; this is called *clamouring* them.

WARBURTON.

Line 520. — *A pair of sweet gloves.*] *Sweet or perfumed gloves* are frequently mentioned by Shakspeare, and were very fashionable in the age of Elizabeth, and long afterwards.

WARBURTON.

Line 603. — *bowling,*] *Bowling*, I believe, is here a term for a dance of smooth motion without great exertion of agility.

JOHNSON.

Line 793. — *and by my fancy :*] It must be remembered that *fancy* in this author very often, as in this place, means *love*.

JOHNSON.

Line 863. *Ourselves to be the slaves of chance.*] As *chance* has driven me to these extremities, so I commit myself to *chance* to be conducted through them.

JOHNSON.

#### ACT V.

Line 17. *Or, from the all that are, took something good,*] This is a favourite thought; it was bestowed on Miranda and Rosalind before.

JOHNSON.

Line 82. *Should rift—*] i. e. should split.

— 95. *Affront his eye*] To *affront*, is to *meet*. JOHNSON.

— 198. ——— *whose daughter*

*His tears proclaim'd his parting with her :*] This is very ungrammatical and obscure. We may better read,

————— *whose daughter*

*His tears proclaim'd her parting with her.*

The prince first tells that the lady came from *Lybia*, the king interrupting him, says, from *Smalus*; from him, says the prince, *whose tears, at parting, shewed her to be his daughter.*

JOHNSON.

The obscurity arises from want of a proper punctuation. By placing a *comma* after *his*, I think the sense is clear'd.

STEVENS.

Line 264. *Your choice is not so rich in worth as beauty,*] *Worth* signifies any kind of *worthiness*, and among others that of high descent. The king means that he is sorry the prince's choice is not in other respects as worthy of him as in beauty. JOHNSON.

Line 347. — *with clipping her :*] i. e. *embracing* her.

— 395. — *had he himself eternity,*] *Eternity* means only *immortality*, or that part of eternity which is to come; so we talk of *eternal* renown and *eternal* infamy. *Immortality* may subsist without *divinity*, and therefore the meaning only is, that if Julio could always continue his labours, he would *minick* nature. JOHNSON.

Line 463. — *franklins say it,*] *Franklin* is a *freeholder*, or *yeoman*, a man above a *villain*, but not a *gentleman*.

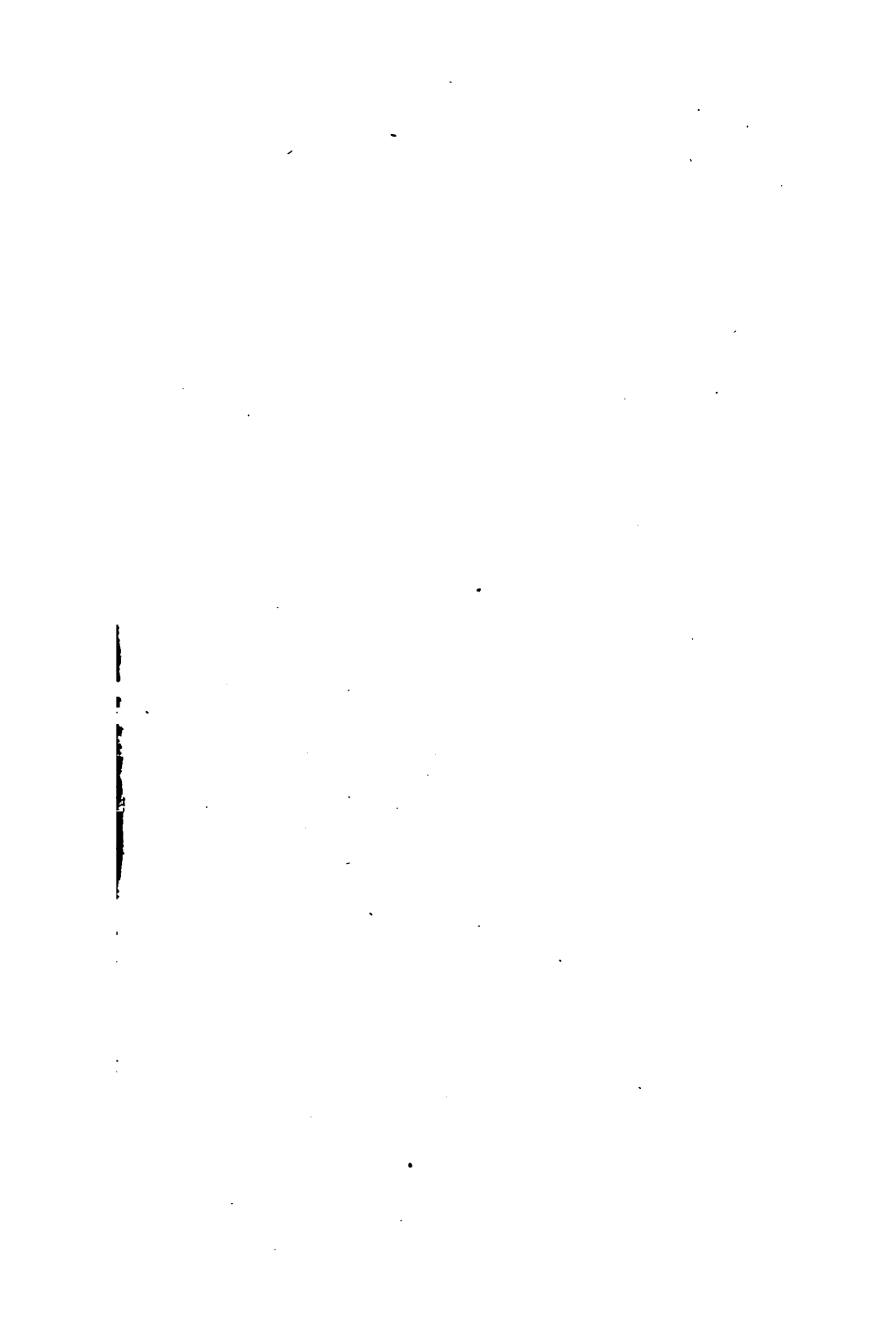
JOHNSON.

Line 467. — *tall fellow of thy hands,*] *Tall*, in that time, was the word used for *stout*. JOHNSON.

Line 533. *O patience ;*] That is, *stay a while, be not so eager*. JOHNSON.

— 562. *The fixture of her eye has motion in't,*] The meaning is, that her eye, though *fixed*, as in an earnest gaze, has motion in it. EDWARDS.

Line 644. *You precious winners all ;*] You who by this discovery have *gained* what you desired may join in festivity, in which I, who have lost what never can be recovered, can have no part. JOHNSON.





Thurston del.

Rhodes sculp.

MACBETH SHALL NEVER VANQUISHED BE, UNTILL  
GREAT BIRNAM WOOD TO HIGH DUN SINANE HILL

SHALL COME AGAINST HIM.

Act 4. Scene 1.

London. Published by Thomas Tegg, No. 111, Cheapside, June 24. 1815.

Printed by Dixon.

Proof

## PLACERVILLE





Fig. 100

MAILED ... ..  
... ..  
... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..



**MACBETH.**

**VOL. V**

**H**



MACBETH.] In order to make a true estimate of the abilities and merit of a writer, it is always necessary to examine the genius of his age, and the opinions of his contemporaries. A poet who should now make the whole action of his tragedy depend upon enchantment, and produce the chief events by the assistance of supernatural agents, would be censured as transgressing the bounds of probability, be banished from the theatre to the nursery, and condemned to write fairy tales instead of tragedies; but a survey of the notions that prevailed at the time when this play was written, will prove that Shakespeare was in no danger of such censures, since he only turned the system that was then universally admitted, to his advantage, and was far from overburdening the credulity of his audience.

The reality of witchcraft or enchantment, which, though not strictly the same, are confounded in this play, has in all ages and countries been credited by the common people, and in most, by the learned themselves. The phantoms have indeed appeared more frequently, in proportion as the darkness of ignorance has been more gross; but it cannot be shown, that the brightest gleams of knowledge have at any time been sufficient to drive them out of the world. The time in which this kind of credulity was at its height, seems to have been that of the holy war, in which the Christians imputed all their defeats to enchantments or diabolical opposition, as they ascribed their success to the assistance of their military saints; and the learned Dr. Warburton appears to believe (*Supplement to the Introduction to Don Quixote*) that the first accounts of enchantments were brought into this part of the world by those who returned from their eastern expeditions. But there is always some distance between the birth and maturity of folly as of wickedness: this opinion had long existed, though perhaps the application of it had in no foregoing age been so frequent, nor the reception so general. Olympiodorus, in Photius's *Extracts*, tells us of one Libanius, who practised this kind of military magic, and having promised *κατὰ βασιλῆα καὶ βασιλέων ἐναντίον*, to perform great things against the Barbarians without soldiers, was, at the instance of the empress Placida, put to death, when he was about to have given proofs of his abilities. The empress showed some

kindness in her anger, by cutting him off at a time so convenient for his reputation.

But a more remarkable proof of the antiquity of this notion may be found in St. Chrysostom's book *de Sacerdotio*, which exhibits a scene of enchantments not exceeded by any romance of the middle age: he supposes a spectator overlooking a field of battle attended by one that points out all the various objects of horror, the engines of destruction, and the arts of slaughter. *Διασκεψέτω δὲ ἐν τῇ σφῆρῃ τῶν ἰππέων καὶ ὀπλοῦν ἄρματα ἰσχυρὰ καὶ τῶν ἰππῶν ἰσχυρὰ, καὶ ἰσχυρὰ τῶν ἀντιπάλων, καὶ τῶν ἰππῶν ἰσχυρὰ καὶ τῶν ἰππῶν ἰσχυρὰ.* *Let him then proceed to show him in the opposite armies horses flying by enchantment, armed men transported through the air, and every power and form of magic.* Whether St. Chrysostom believed that such performances were really to be seen in a day of battle, or only endeavoured to enliven his description, by adopting the notions of the vulgar, it is equally certain, that such notions were in his time received, and that therefore they were not imported from the Saracens in a later age; the wars with the Saracens however gave occasion to their propagation, not only as bigotry naturally discovers prodigies, but as the scene of action was removed to a great distance.

The Reformation did not immediately arrive at its meridian, and though day was gradually increasing upon us, the goblins of witchcraft still continued to hover in the twilight. In the time of Queen Elizabeth was the remarkable trial of the witches of Warbois, whose conviction is still commemorated in an annual sermon at Huntingdon. But in the reign of King James, in which this tragedy was written, many circumstances concurred to propagate and confirm this opinion. The King, who was much celebrated for his knowledge, had, before his arrival in England, not only examined in person a woman accused of witchcraft, but had given a very formal account of the practices and illusions of evil spirits, the compacts of witches, the ceremonies used by them, the manner of detecting them, and the justice of punishing them, in his dialogues of *Demonologie*, written in the Scottish dialect, and published at Edinburgh. This book was, soon after his succession, reprinted at London, and as the ready way to gain King James's favour was to flatter his speculations, the system of *Demonologie* was

immediately adopted by all who desired either to gain preferment or not to lose it. Thus the doctrine of witchcraft was very powerfully inculcated; and as the greatest part of mankind have no other reason for their opinions than that they are in fashion, it cannot be doubted but this persuasion made a rapid progress, since vanity and credulity co-operated in its favour. The infection soon reached the parliament, who, in the first year of King James, made a law, by which it was enacted, chap. xii. That "if any person shall use any invocation or conjuration of any evil or wicked spirit; 2. or shall consult, covenant with, entertain, employ, feed or reward any evil or cursed spirit to or for any intent or purpose; 3. or take up any dead man, woman, or child, out of the grave,—or the skin, bone, or any part of the dead person, to be employed or used in any manner of witchcraft, sorcery, charm, or enchantment; 4. or shall use, practise, or exercise any sort of witchcraft, sorcery, charm, or enchantment; 5. whereby any person shall be destroyed, killed, wasted, consumed, pined, or lamed in any part of the body; 6. That every such person being convicted shall suffer death." This law was repealed in our own time.

Thus, in the time of Shakespeare, was the doctrine of witchcraft at once established by law and by the fashion, and it became not only unpolite, but criminal, to doubt it; and as prodigies are always seen in proportion as they are expected, witches were every day discovered, and multiplied so fast in some places, that Bishop Hall mentions a village in Lancashire\*, where their number was greater than that of the houses. The jesuits and sectaries took advantage of this universal error, and endeavoured to promote the interest of their parties by pretended cures of persons afflicted by evil spirits; but they were detected and exposed by the clergy of the established church.

Upon this general infatuation Shakespeare might be easily allowed to found a play, especially since he has followed with great exactness such histories as were then thought

\* In Nashe's *Levies Staff*, 1590, it is said, that no less than six hundred witches were executed at one time: "It is evident, by the confession of the six hundred Scotch witches executed in Scotland at Bartholomew tide was twelve month, that in Fiermouth road they were altogether in a plump on Christmas eve was two years, when the great flood was; and there stirred up such torndoes and fierceness of tempests, as will be spoken of there whilst any winds or storms and tempests chaef and puff to the lower region."—*Reed*.

true; nor can it be doubted that the scenes of enchantment, however they may now be ridiculed, were both by himself and his audience thought awful and affecting. JOHNSON.

In the concluding paragraph of Dr. Johnson's admirable introduction to this play, he seems apprehensive that the fame of Shakespeare's magic may be endangered by modern ridicule. I shall not hesitate, however, to predict its security, till our national taste is wholly corrupted, and we no longer deserve the first of all dramatic enjoyments; for such, in my opinion at least, is the tragedy of *Macbeth*.

STEEVENS.

Malcolm II. King of Scotland, had two daughters. The eldest was married to Crynin, the father of Duncan, Thane of the Isles, and western parts of Scotland; and on the death of Malcolm, without male issue, Duncan succeeded to the throne. Malcolm's second daughter was married to Sinel, Thane of Glamis, the father of Macbeth. Duncan, who married the daughter\* of Siward, Earl of Northumberland, was murdered by his cousin german, Macbeth, in the castle of Inverness, according to Buchanan, in the year 1040; according to Hector Boethius, in 1045. Boethius, whose *History of Scotland* was first printed in seventeen books, at Paris, in 1526, thus describes the event which forms the basis of the tragedy before us: "Makbeth, be persuasion of his wyfe, gaderit his friendis to ane counsall at Invernes, quhare kyng Duncane happennit to be for y<sup>e</sup> tyme. And because he fand sufficient opportunitie, he support of Banquo and otheris his friendis, he slew kyng Duncane, the vii zeir of his regne." After the murder of Duncan, Macbeth "come with ane gret power to Seone, and tuk the crowne." *Chronicles of Scotland*, translated by John Bellenden, folio, 1541. Macbeth was himself slain by Macduff in the year 1061, according to Boethius; according to Buchanan, in 1057; at which time King Edward the Confessor possessed the throne of England. Holinshed copied the history of Boethius, and on Holinshed's relation Shakespeare formed his play.

In the reign of Duncan, Banquo having been plundered by the people of Lochaber of some of the king's revenues, which he had collected, and being dangerously wounded in

\* — the daughter—] More probably the sister. See note on *The Croughall of Andrew Wyntoun*, Vol. II. p. 475.—Steevens.

the affray, the persons concerned in this outrage were summoned to appear at a certain day. But they slew the *serjeant at arms* who summoned them, and chose one MACDOWALD as their captain. Macdowald speedily collected a considerable body of forces from Ireland and the Western Isles, and in one action gained a victory over the king's army. In this battle Malcolm, a Scottish nobleman, who was (says Boethius) "Lieutenant to Duncan in Lochaber," was slain. Afterwards Macbeth and Banquo were appointed to the command of the army; and Macdowald being obliged to take refuge in a castle in Lochaber, first slew his wife and children, and then himself. Macbeth, on entering the castle, finding his dead body, ordered his head to be cut off, and carried to the king, at the castle of Bertha, and his body to be hung on a high tree.

At a subsequent period, in the last year of Duncan's reign, Sueno, King of Norway, landed a powerful army in Fife, for the purpose of invading Scotland. Duncan immediately assembled an army to oppose him, and gave the command of two divisions of it to Macbeth and Banquo, putting himself at the head of a third. Sueno was successful in one battle, but in a second was routed; and, after a great slaughter of his troops, he escaped with ten persons only, and fled back to Norway. Though there was an interval of time between the rebellion of Macdowald and the invasion of Sueno, our author has woven these two actions together, and immediately after Sueno's defeat the present play commences.

It is remarkable that Buchanan has pointed out Macbeth's history as a subject for the stage. "*Multa hic fabulosa quidam nostrorum affingunt; sed, quia theatris aut Milesiis fabulis sunt aptiora quam historiae, ea omitto.* RERUM SCOT. HIST. L. VII. But there was no translation of Buchanan's work till after our author's death.

This tragedy was written, I believe, in the year 1606. See *An Attempt to ascertain the Order of Shakspeare's Plays*, Vol. II. MALONE.



**PERSONS REPRESENTED.**

---

**DUNCAN**, *king of Scotland:*

**MALCOLM**,  
**DONALBAIN**, } *his sons.*

**MACBETH**,  
**BANQUO**, } *generals of the king's army.*

**MACDUFF**,  
**LENOX**,  
**ROSSE**,  
**MENTETH**, } *noblemen of Scotland.*  
**ANGUS**,  
**CATHNESS**,

**FLEANCE**, *son to Banquo.*

**SIWARD**, *earl of Northumberland, general of the English forces.*

*Young SIWARD*, *his son.*

**SEYTON**, *an officer attending on Macbeth.*

*Sen to MACDUFF.*

*An English Doctor. A Scotch Doctor.*

*A Soldier. A Porter. An old Man.*

**Lady MACBETH.**

**Lady MACDUFF.**

*Gentlewoman attending on Lady Macbeth.*

**HECATE**, *and three Witches.*

*Lords, Gentlemen, Officers, Soldiers, Murderers,  
Attendants, and Messengers.*

*The Ghost of Banquo, and several other Apparitions.*

**SCENE**, *in the end of the fourth Act, lies in England;  
through the rest of the play, in Scotland; and,  
chiefly, at Macbeth's castle.*

# MACBETH.

---

---

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—*An open place.*

*Thunder and lightning. Enter three Witches.*

1 *Witch.* When shall we three meet again  
In thunder, lightning, or in rain?

2 *Witch.* When the hurlyburly's done,  
When the battle's lost and won:

3 *Witch.* That will be ere set of sun.

1 *Witch.* Where the place?

2 *Witch.* Upon the heath:

3 *Witch.* There to meet with Macbeth.

1 *Witch.* I come, Graymalkin!

*All.* Paddock calls:—Anon.—

Fair is foul, and foul is fair:

Hover through the fog and filthy air. [*Witches vanish.*]

### SCENE II.—*A camp near Fores.*

*Alarum within. Enter King DUNCAN, MALCOLM, DONALBAIN, LENOX, with Attendants, meeting a bleeding Soldier.*

*Dun.* What bloody man is that? He can report,  
As seemeth by his plight, of the revolt  
The newest state.

*Mal.* This is the sergeant,  
Who, like a good and hardy soldier, fought  
'Gainst my captivity:—Hail, brave friend!  
Say to the king the knowledge of the broil,  
As thou didst leave it.

*Sold.* Doubtfully it stood;  
As two spent swimmers, that do cling together,  
And choke their art. The merciless Macdonwald  
(Worthy to be a rebel; for, to that,  
The multiplying villainies of nature  
Do swarm upon him,) from the western isles  
Of Kernes and Gallowglasses is supplied;  
And fortune, on his damned quarrel smiling,  
Show'd like a rebel's whore: But all's too weak:  
For brave Macbeth, (well he deserves that name,)  
Disdaining fortune, with his brandish'd steel,  
Which smok'd with bloody execution,  
Like valour's minion,  
Carv'd out his passage, till he fac'd the slave;  
And ne'er shook hands, nor bade farewell to him,  
Till he unseam'd him from the nave to th' chaps,  
And fix'd his head upon our battlements.

*Dun.* O, valiant cousin! worthy gentleman!

*Sold.* As whence the sun 'gins his reflexion  
Shipwrecking storms and direful thunders break;  
So from that spring, whence comfort seem'd to  
come,

Discomfort swells. Mark, king of Scotland, mark:  
No sooner justice had, with valour arm'd,  
Compell'd these skipping Kernes to trust their heels;  
But the Norway lord, surveying vantage,  
With furbish'd arms, and new supplies of men,  
Began a fresh assault.

*Dun.* Dismay'd not this  
Our captains, Macbeth and Banquo?

*Sold.* Yes;  
As sparrows, eagles; or the hare, the lion.  
If I say sooth, I must report they were  
As cannons overcharg'd with double cracks;  
So they  
Doubly redoubled strokes upon the foe:  
Except they meant to bathe in reeking wounds,  
Or memorize another Golgotha,  
I cannot tell:—  
But I am faint, my gashes cry for help.

*Dun.* So well thy words become thee, as thy  
wounds;  
They smack of honour both:—Go, get him surgeons.  
[*Exit Soldier, attended.*]

*Enter Rosse.*

Who comes here?

*Mal.* The worthy thane of Rosse.

*Len.* What a haste looks through his eyes! So should  
he look,

That séems to speak things strange.

*Rosse.* God save the king!

*Dun.* Whence cam'st thou, worthy thane?

*Rosse.* From Fife, great king,

Where the Norweyan banners flout the sky.

And fan our people cold.

Norway himself, with terrible numbers,

Assisted by that most disloyal traitor

The thane of Cawdor, 'gan a dismal conflict:

Till that Bellona's bridegroom, lapp'd in proof,

Confronted him with self-comparisons,

Point against point rebellious, arm 'gainst arm,  
 Curbing his lavish spirit: And, to conclude,  
 The victory fell on us:—

*Dun.* Great happiness!

*Rosse.* That now

Sweno, the Norways' king, craves composition;  
 Nor would we deign him burial of his men,  
 Till he disbursed, at Saint Colmes' inch,  
 Ten thousand dollars to our general use.

*Dun.* No more that thane of Cawdor shall deceive  
 Our bosom interest:—Go, pronounce his death,  
 And with his former title greet Macbeth.

*Rosse.* I'll see it done.

*Dun.* What he hath lost, noble Macbeth hath won.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*A heath.*

*Thunder.* Enter the three Witches.

1 *Witch.* Where hast thou been, sister?

2 *Witch.* Killing swine.

3 *Witch.* Sister, where thou?

1 *Witch.* A sailor's wife had chesnuts in her lap,  
 And mounch'd, and mounch'd, and mounch'd:—*Give*  
*me, quoth I:*

*Arcint thee, witch!* the rump-fed ronyon cries.  
 Her husband's to Aleppo gone, master o' th' Tiger:  
 But in a sieve I'll thither sail,  
 And, like a rat without a tail,  
 I'll do, I'll do, and I'll do.

2 *Witch.* I'll give thee a wind.

1 *Witch.* Thou art kind.

3 *Witch.* And I another.

1 *Witch*. I myself have all the other ;  
 And the very ports they blow,  
 All the quarters that they know ,  
 I' th' shipman's card.  
 I will drain him dry as hay :  
 Sleep shall, neither night nor day,  
 Hang upon his pent-house lid ;  
 He shall live a man forbid :  
 Weary sev'n-nights, nine times nine,  
 Shall he dwindle, peak, and pine :  
 Though his bark cannot be lost,  
 Yet it shall be tempest-toss'd .  
 Look what I have.

2 *Witch*. Show me, show me.

1 *Witch*. Here I have a pilot's thumb,  
 Wreck'd, as homeward he did come. [*Drum within*].

3 *Witch*. A drum, a drum ;  
 Macbeth doth come.

*All*. The weird sisters, hand in hand,  
 Posters of the sea and land,  
 Thus do go about, about ;  
 Thrice to thine, and thrice to mine,  
 And thrice again, to make up nine :  
 Peace!—the charm's wound up.

*Enter MACBETH and BANQUO.*

*Macb*. So foul and fair a day I have not seen.

*Ban*. How far is't call'd to Fores?—What are these,  
 So wither'd, and so wild in their attire ;  
 That look not like the inhabitants o' th' earth,  
 And yet are on't? Live you? or are you aught  
 That man may question? You seem to understand me,  
 By each at once her choppy finger laying

Upon her skinny lips:—You should be women,  
And yet your beards forbid me to interpret  
That you are so.

*Macb.* Speak, if you can;—What are you?

1 *Witch.* All hail, Macbeth! hail to thee, thane of  
Glamis!

2 *Witch.* All hail, Macbeth! hail to thee, thane of  
Cawdor!

3 *Witch.* All hail, Macbeth! that shalt be king  
hereafter.

*Ban.* Good sir, why do you start; and seem to fear  
Things that do sound so fair?—I th' name of truth,  
Are ye fantastical, or that indeed  
Which outwardly ye show? My noble partner  
You greet with present grace, and great prediction  
Of noble having, and of royal hope,  
That he seems rapt withal; to me you speak not:  
If you can look into the seeds of time,  
And say, which grain will grow, and which will not;  
Speak then to me, who neither beg, nor fear,  
Your favours, nor your hate.

1 *Witch.* Hail!

2 *Witch.* Hail!

3 *Witch.* Hail!

1 *Witch.* Lesser than Macbeth, and greater.

2 *Witch.* Not so happy, yet much happier.

3 *Witch.* Thou shalt get kings, though thou be none:  
So, all hail, Macbeth, and Banquo!

1 *Witch.* Banquo, and Macbeth, all hail!

*Macb.* Stay, you imperfect speakers, tell me more:  
By Sinel's death, I know, I am thane of Glamis;  
But how of Cawdor? the thane of Cawdor lives,  
A prosperous gentleman; and, to be king,

Stands not within the prospect of belief,  
 No more than to be Cawdor. Say, from whence  
 You owe this strange intelligence? or why  
 Upon this blasted heath you stop our way  
 With such prophetick greeting?—Speak, I charge you.

[Witches vanish.]

*Ban.* The earth hath bubbles, as the water has,  
 And these are of them:—Whither are they vanish'd?

*Macb.* Into the air; and what seem'd corporal,  
 melted

As breath into the wind.—Would they had staid!

*Ban.* Were such things here, as we do speak about?  
 Or have we eaten of the insane root,  
 That takes the reason prisoner?

*Macb.* Your children shall be kings.

*Ban.* You shall be king.

*Macb.* And thane of Cawdor too; went it not so?

*Ban.* To th' self-same tune, and words. Who's here?

*Enter Rosse and Angus.*

*Rosse.* The king hath happily receiv'd, Macbeth,  
 The news of thy success: and when he reads  
 Thy personal venture in the rebels' fight,  
 His wonders and his praises do contend,  
 Which should be thine, or his: Silenc'd with that,  
 In viewing o'er the rest o' th' self-same day,  
 He finds thee in the stout Norweyan ranks,  
 Nothing afeard of what thyself didst make,  
 Strange images of death. As thick as tale,  
 Came post with post; and every one did bear  
 Thy praises in his kingdom's great defence,  
 And pour'd them down before him.

*Ang.*

We are sent,



To give thee, from our royal master, thanks;  
To herald thee into his sight, not pay thee.

*Rosse.* And, for an earnest of a greater honour,  
He bade me, from him, call thee thane of Cawdor:  
In which addition, hail, most worthy thane!  
For it is thine.

*Ban.* What, can the devil speak true?

*Macb.* The thane of Cawdor lives; Why do you dress me  
In borrow'd robes?

*Ang.* Who was the thane, lives yet;  
But under heavy judgment bears that life  
Which he deserves to lose. Whether he was  
Combin'd with Norway; or did line the rebel  
With hidden help and vantage; or that with both  
He labour'd in his country's wreck, I know not;  
But treasons capital, confess'd, and prov'd,  
Have overthrown him.

*Macb.* Glamis, and thane of Cawdor:  
The greatest is behind.—Thanks for your pains.—  
Do you not hope your children shall be kings,  
When those that gave the thane of Cawdor to me,  
Promis'd no less to them?

*Ban.* That, trusted home,  
Might yet enkindle you unto the crown,  
Besides the thane of Cawdor. But 'tis strange:  
And oftentimes, to win us to our harm,  
The instruments of darkness tell us truths;  
Win us with honest trifles, to betray us  
In deepest consequence.—  
Cousins, a word, I pray you.

*Macb.* Two truths are told,  
As happy prologues to the swelling act  
Of the imperial theme.—I thank you, gentlemen.—

This supernatural soliciting  
 Cannot be ill; cannot be good:—If ill,  
 Why hath it given me earnest of success,  
 Commencing in a truth? I am thane of Cawdor:  
 If good, why do I yield to that suggestion  
 Whose horrid image doth unfix my hair,  
 And make my seated heart knock at my ribs,  
 Against the use of nature? Present fears  
 Are less than horrible imaginings:  
 My thought, whose murder yet is but fantastical,  
 Shakes so my single state of man, that function  
 Is smother'd in surmise; and nothing is,  
 But what is not.

*Ban.* Look, how our partner's rapt.

*Macb.* If chance will have me king, why, chance  
 may crown me,

Without my stir.

*Ban.* New honours come upon him  
 Like our strange garments; cleave not to their mould,  
 But with the aid of use.

*Macb.* Come what come may;  
 Time and the hour runs through the roughest day.

*Ban.* Worthy Macbeth, we stay upon your leisure.

*Macb.* Give me your favour:—my dull brain was  
 wrought

With things forgotten. Kind gentlemen, your pains  
 Are register'd where every day I turn  
 The leaf to read them.—Let us toward the king.—  
 Think upon what hath chanc'd; and, at more time,  
 The interim having weigh'd it, let us speak  
 Our free hearts each to other.

*Ban.* Very gladly.

*Macb.* Till then, enough.—Come, friends. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—Fores. *A room in the palace.*

*Flourish.* Enter DUNCAN, MALCOLM, DONALBAIN,  
LENOX, and Attendants.

*Dun.* Is execution done on Cawdor? Are not  
Those in commission yet return'd?

*Mal.* My liege,  
They are not yet come back. But I have spoke  
With one that saw him die: who did report,  
That very frankly he confess'd his treasons;  
Implor'd your highness' pardon; and set forth  
A deep repentance: nothing in his life  
Became him, like the leaving it; he died  
As one that had been studied in his death,  
To throw away the dearest thing he ow'd,  
As 'twere a careless trifle.

*Dun.* There's no art,  
To find the mind's construction in the face:  
He was a gentleman on whom I built  
An absolute trust.—O worthiest cousin!

*Enter* MACBETH, BANQUO, ROSSE, and ANGUS.

The sin of my ingratitude even now  
Was heavy on me: Thou art so far before,  
That swiftest wing of recompense is slow  
To overtake thee. 'Would thou hadst less deserv'd;  
That the proportion both of thanks and payment  
Might have been mine! only I have left to say,  
More is thy due than more than all can pay.

*Macb.* The service and the loyalty I owe,  
In doing it, pays itself. Your highness' part  
Is to receive our duties: and our duties

Are to your throne and state, children, and servants ;  
Which do but what they should, by doing every thing  
Safe toward your love and honour.

*Dun.*

Welcome hither:

I have begun to plant thee, and will labour  
To make thee full of growing.—Noble Banquo,  
That hast no less deserv'd, nor must be known  
No less to have done so, let me infold thee,  
And hold thee to my heart.

*Ban.*

There if I grow,

The harvest is your own.

*Dun.*

My plenteous joys,

Wanton in fulness, seek to hide themselves  
In drops of sorrow.—Sons, kinsmen, thanes,  
And you whose places are the nearest, know,  
We will establish our estate upon  
Our eldest, Malcolm ; whom we name hereafter,  
The prince of Cumberland : which honour must  
Not, unaccompanied, invest him only,  
But signs of nobleness, like stars, shall shine  
On all deservers.—From hence to Inverness,  
And bind us further to you.

*Macb.* The rest is labour, which is not us'd for you ;  
I'll be myself the harbinger, and make joyful  
The hearing of my wife with your approach ;  
So, humbly take my leave.

*Dun.*

My worthy Cawdor !

*Macb.* The prince of Cumberland !—That is a step,  
On which I must fall down, or else o'er-leap, [*Aside.*  
For in my way it lies. Stars, hide your fires !  
Let not light see my black and deep desires :  
The eye wink at the hand ! yet let that be,  
Which the eye fears, when it is done, to see. ] [*Exit.*

*Dun.* True, worthy Banquo; he is full so valiant;  
 And in his commendations I am fed;  
 It is a banquet to me. Let us after him,  
 Whose care is gone before to bid us welcome:  
 It is a peerless kinsman. [Flourish. *Exeunt.*

SCENE V.—Inverness. *A room in Macbeth's castle.*

*Enter Lady MACBETH, reading a letter.*

*Lady M.* They met me in the day of success; and  
 I have learned by the perfectest report, they have more in  
 them than mortal knowledge. When I burned in desire to  
 question them further, they made themselves—air, into  
 which they vanished. Whiles I stood rapt in the wonder of  
 it, came missives from the king, who all-hailed me, Thane  
 of Cawdor; by which title, before, these weird sisters  
 saluted me, and referred me to the coming on of time,  
 with, Hail, king that shalt be! This have I thought  
 good to deliver thee, my dearest partner of greatness; that  
 thou mightest not lose the dues of rejoicing, by being igno-  
 rant of what greatness is promised thee. Lay it to thy  
 heart, and farewell.

Glamis thou art, and Cawdor; and shalt be  
 What thou art promis'd:—Yet do I fear thy nature;  
 It is too full o' th' milk of human kindness,  
 To catch the nearest way: Thou would'st be  
     great;  
 Art not without ambition; but without  
 The illness should attend it. What thou would'st  
     highly,  
 That would'st thou holily; would'st not play false,  
 And yet would'st wrongly win: thou'd'st have, great  
     Glamis,

That which cries, *Thus thou must do, if thou have it,*  
*And that which rather thou dost fear to do,*  
*Than wishest should be undone.* Hie thee hither,  
 That I may pour my spirits in thine ear;  
 And chastise with the valour of my tongue  
 All that impedes thee from the golden round,  
 Which fate and metaphysical aid doth seem  
 To have thee crown'd withal.—What is your tidings?

*Enter an Attendant.*

*Atten.* The king comes here to-night.

*Lady M.* Thou'rt mad to say it:  
 Is not thy master with him? who, wer't so,  
 Would have inform'd for preparation.

*Atten.* So please you, it is true; our thane is coming:  
 One of my fellows had the speed of him;  
 Who, almost dead for breath, had scarcely more  
 Than would make up his message.

*Lady M.* Give him tending,  
 He brings great news. The raven himself is hoarse,  
 [Exit Attendant.]

That croaks the fatal entrance of Duncan  
 Under my battlements. Come, come, you spirits  
 That tend on mortal thoughts, unsex me here;  
 And fill me, from the crown to the toe, top-full  
 Of direst cruelty! make thick my blood,  
 Stop up th'access and passage to remorse;  
 That no compunctious visitings of nature  
 Shake my fell purpose, nor keep peace between  
 The effect, and it! Come to my woman's breasts,  
 And take my milk for gall, you murd'ring ministers,  
 Wherever in your sightless substances  
 You wait on nature's mischief! Come, thick night,

And pall thee in the dunnest smoke of hell!  
 That my keen knife see not the wound it makes;  
 Nor heaven peep through the blanket of the dark,  
 To cry, *Hold, hold!*—Great Glamis! worthy Cawdor!

*Enter MACBETH.*

Greater than both, by the all-hail hereafter!  
 Thy letters have transported me beyond  
 This ignorant present, and I feel now  
 The future in the instant.

*Macb.* My dearest love,

Duncan comes here to-night.

*Lady M.* And when goes hence?

*Macb.* To-morrow,—as he purposes.

*Lady M.* O, never

Shall sun that morrow see!

Your face, my thane, is as a book, where men  
 May read strange matters:—To beguile the time,  
 Look like the time; bear welcome in your eye,  
 Your hand, your tongue: look like the innocent flower,  
 But be the serpent under it. He that's coming  
 Must be provided for: and you shall put  
 This night's great business into my despatch;  
 Which shall to all our nights and days to come  
 Give solely sovereign sway and masterdom.

*Macb.* We will speak further.

*Lady M.* Only look up clear;

To alter favour ever is to fear:

Leave all the rest to me.

[*Exeunt*

SCENE VI.—*The same. Before the castle.*

*Hautboys. Servants of Macbeth attending.*

*Enter DUNCAN, MALCOLM, DONALBAIN, BANQUO, LENOX,  
MACDUFF, ROSSE, ANGUS, and Attendants.*

*Dun.* This castle hath a pleasant seat; the air  
Nimble and sweetly recommends itself  
Unto our gentle senses.

*Ban.* This guest of summer,  
The temple-haunting martlet, does approve,  
By his lov'd mansionry, that the heaven's breath,  
Smells woingly here: no jutting, frieze, buttress,  
Nor coigne of vantage, but this bird hath made  
His pendent bed, and procreant cradle: Where they  
Most breed and haunt, I have observ'd, the air  
Is delicate.

*Enter Lady MACBETH.*

*Dun.* See, see! our honour'd hostess!  
The love that follows us, sometime is our trouble,  
Which still we thank as love. Herein I teach you,  
How you shall bid God yield us for your pains,  
And thank us for your trouble.

*Lady M.* All our service  
In every point twice done, and then done double,  
Were poor and single business, to contend  
Against those honours deep and broad; wherewith  
Your majesty loads our house: For those of old,  
And the late dignities heap'd up to them,  
We rest your hermits.

*Dun.* Where's the thane of Cawdor?  
We cours'd him at the heels, and had a purpose



To be his purveyor: but he rides well;  
 And his great love, sharp as his spur, hath hold him  
 To his home before us: Fair and noble hostess,  
 We are your guest to-night.

*Lady M.* Your servants ever  
 Have theirs, themselves, and what is theirs, in compt,  
 To make their audit at your highness' pleasure,  
 Still to return your own.

*Dun.* Give me your hand:  
 Conduct me to mine host; we love him highly,  
 And shall continue our graces towards him.  
 By your leave, hostess. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VII.—*The same. A room in the castle.*

*Hautboys and torches. Enter, and pass over the stage,  
 a Sewer, and divers Servants with dishes and service.  
 Then enter MACBETH.*

*Macb.* If it were done, when 'tis done, then 'twere well  
 It were done quickly: If the assassination  
 Could trammel up the consequence, and catch,  
 With his surcease, success; that but this blow  
 Might be the be-all and the end-all here,  
 But here, upon this bank and shoal of time,—  
 We'd jump the life to come.—But, in these cases,  
 We still have judgement here; that we but teach  
 Bloody instructions, which, being taught, return  
 To plague th' inventor: This even-handed justice  
 Commends th' ingredients of our poison'd chalice  
 To our own lips. He's here in double trust:  
 First, as I am his kinsman and his subject,  
 Strong both against the deed; then, as his host,  
 Who should against his murderer shut the door,

Not bear the knife myself. Besides, this Duncan  
 Hath borne his faculties so meek, hath been  
 So clear in his great office, that his virtues  
 Will plead like angels, trumpet-tongued, against  
 The deep damnation of his taking-off:  
 And pity, like a naked new-born babe,  
 Striding the blast, or heaven's cherubin, hors'd  
 Upon the sightless couriers of the air,  
 Shall blow the horrid deed in every eye,  
 That tears shall drown the wind.—I have no spur  
 To prick the sides of my intent, but only  
 Vaulting ambition, which o'er-leaps itself,  
 And falls on the other.—How now, what news?

*Enter Lady MACBETH.*

*Lady M.* He has almost supp'd; Why have you left  
 the chamber?

*Macb.* Hath he ask'd for me?

*Lady M.* Know you not, he has?

*Macb.* We will proceed no further in this business:  
 He hath honour'd me of late; and I have bought  
 Golden opinions from all sorts of people,  
 Which would be worn now in their newest gloss,  
 Not cast aside so soon.

*Lady M.* Was the hope drunk,  
 Wherein you dress'd yourself? hath it slept since?  
 And wakes it now, to look so green and pale  
 At what it did so freely? From this time,  
 Such I account thy love. Art thou afraid  
 To be the same in thine own act and valour,  
 As thou art in desire? Would'st thou have that  
 Which thou esteem'st the ornament of life,  
 And live a coward in thine own esteem;

Letting I dare not wait upon I would,  
Like the poor cat i' th' adage?

*Macb.*

Pr'ythee, peace:

I dare do all that may become a man;  
Who dares do more, is none.

*Lady M.*

What beast was't then,

That made you break this enterprize to me?  
When you durst do it, then you were a man;  
And, to be more than what you were, you would  
Be so much more the man. Nor time, nor place,  
Did then adhere, and yet you would make both:  
They have made themselves, and that their fitness now  
Does unmake you. I have given suck; and know  
How tender 'tis, to love the babe that milks me:  
I would, while it was smiling in my face,  
Have pluck'd my nipple from his boneless gums,  
And dash'd the brains out, had I so sworn, as you  
Have done to this.

*Macb.*

If we should fail,——

*Lady M.*

**We fail!**

But screw your courage to the sticking-place,  
And we'll not fail. When Duncan is asleep,  
(Whereto the rather shall his day's hard journey  
Soundly invite him,) his two chamberlains  
Will I with wine and wassel so convince,  
That memory, the warder of the brain,  
Shall be a fume, and the receipt of reason  
A limbeck only: When in swinish sleep  
Their drenched natures lie, as in a death,  
What cannot you and I perform upon  
Th'unguarded Duncan? what not put upon  
His spongy officers; who shall bear the guilt  
Of our great quell?

*Macb.* Bring forth men-children only!  
 For thy undaunted mettle should compose  
 Nothing but males. Will it not be receiv'd,  
 When we have mark'd with blood those sleepy two  
 Of his own chamber, and us'd their very daggers,  
 That they have don't?

*Lady M.* Who dares receive it other,  
 As we shall make our griefs and clamour roar  
 Upon his death?

*Macb.* I am settled, and bend up  
 Each corporal agent to this terrible feat.  
 Away, and mock the time with fairest show:  
 False face must hide what the false heart doth know.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*The same. Court within the castle.*

*Enter BANQUO and FLEANCE, and a Servant, with a torch  
 before them.*

*Ban.* How goes the night, boy?

*Fle.* The moon is down; I have not heard the clock.

*Ban.* And she goes down at twelve.

*Fle.* I take't, 'tis later, sir.

*Ban.* Hold, take my sword:—There's husbandry in  
 heaven,

Their candles are all out.—Take thee that too.

A heavy summons lies like lead upon me,

And yet I would not sleep: Merciful powers!

Restrain in me the cursed thoughts, that nature  
Gives way to in repose!—Give me my sword;—

*Enter MACBETH, and a Servant with a torch.*

Who's there?

*Macb.* A friend.

*Ban.* What, sir, not yet at rest? The king's a-bed:  
He hath been in unusual pleasure, and  
Sent forth great largess to your offices:  
This diamond he greets your wife withal,  
By the name of most kind hostess; and shut up  
In measureless content.

*Macb.* Being unprepar'd,  
Our will became the servant to defect;  
Which else should free have wrought.

*Ban.* All's well.  
I dreamt last night of the three weird sisters:  
To you they have show'd some truth.

*Macb.* I think not of them:  
Yet, when we can entreat an hour to serve,  
Would spend it in some words upon that business,  
If you would grant the time.

*Ban.* At your kind'st leisure.

*Macb.* If you shall cleave to my consent,—when 'tis,  
It shall make honour for you.

*Ban.* So I lose none,  
In seeking to augment it, but still keep  
My bosom franchis'd, and allegiance clear,  
I shall be counsel'd.

*Macb.* Good repose, the while!

*Ban.* Thanks, sir; The like to you!

*[Exit BANQUO.]*

*Macb.* Go, bid thy mistress, when my drink is ready,

She strike upon the bell. Get thee to bed.

[*Exit Servant.*]

Is this a dagger, which I see before me,  
The handle toward my hand? Come, let me clutch  
thee:—

I have thee not, and yet I see thee still.

Art thou not, fatal vision, sensible

To feeling, as to sight? or art thou but

A dagger of the mind; a false creation,

Proceeding from the heat-oppressed brain?

I see thee yet, in form as palpable

As this which now I draw.

Thou marshal'st me the way that I was going;

And such an instrument I was to use.

Mine eyes are made the fools o' th' other senses,

Or else worth all the rest: I see thee still;

And on thy blade, and dudgeon, gouts of blood,

Which was not so before.—There's no such thing:

It is the bloody business, which informs

Thus to mine eyes.—Now o'er the one half world

Nature seems dead, and wicked dreams abuse

The curtain'd sleep; now witchcraft celebrates

Pale Hecate's offerings; and wither'd murder,

Alarum'd by his centinel, the wolf,

Whose howl's his watch, thus with his stealthy pace,

With Tarquin's ravishing strides, towards his design

Moves like a ghost.—Thou sure and firm-set earth,

Hear not my steps, which way they walk, for fear

Thy very stones prate of my where-about,

And take the present horror from the time,

Which now suits with it.—Whiles I threat, he lives;

Words to the heat of deeds too cold breath gives.

[*A bell rings.*]

I go, and it is done; the bell invites me.  
Hear it not, Duncan; for it is a knell  
That summons thee to heaven, or to hell. [Exit.

SCENE II.—*The same.*

*Enter Lady MACBETH.*

*Lady M.* That which hath made them drunk, hath  
made me bold:  
What hath quench'd them, hath given me fire:—  
Hark!—Peace!  
It was the owl that shriek'd, the fatal bellman,  
Which gives the stern'st good-night. He is about it:  
The doors are open; and the surfeited grooms  
Do mock their charge with snores: I have drugg'd  
their possets,  
That death and nature do contend about them,  
Whether they live, or die.

*Macb.* [Within.] Who's there?—what, ho!

*Lady M.* Alack! I am afraid they have awak'd,  
And 'tis not done:—th' attempt, and not the deed,  
Confounds us:—Hark!—I laid their daggers ready,  
He could not miss them.—Had he not resembled  
My father as he slept, I had done't.—My husband?

*Enter MACBETH.*

*Macb.* I have done the deed:—Didst thou not hear  
a noise?

*Lady M.* I heard the owl scream, and the crickets  
cry.

Did not you speak?

*Macb.*

When?

*Lady M.*

Now.

*Macb.*

As I descended?

*Lady M.* Ay.

*Macb.* Hark!—

Who lies i' th' second chamber?

*Lady M.*

Donalbain.

*Macb.* This is a sorry sight.

[*Looking on his hands.*]

*Lady M.* A foolish thought, to say a sorry sight.

*Macb.* There's one did laugh in's sleep, and one  
cried, *murder!*

That they did wake each other; I stood and heard  
them:

But they did say their prayers, and address'd them |  
Again to sleep.

*Lady M.* There are two lodg'd together.

*Macb.* One cried, *God bless us!* and, *Amen*, the other;  
As they had seen me, with these hangman's hands.

Listening their fear, I could not say, *amen*,

When they did say, *God bless us.*

*Lady M.* Consider it not so deeply.

*Macb.* But wherefore could not I pronounce, *amen*?  
I had most need of blessing, and *amen*

Stuck in my throat.

*Lady M.* These deeds must not be thought  
After these ways; so, it will make us mad.

*Macb.* Methought, I heard a voice cry, *Sleep no  
more!*

*Macbeth does murder sleep, the innocent sleep;*

*Sleep, that knits up the ravel'd sleeve of care,*

*The death of each day's life, sore labour's bath,*

*Balm of hurt minds, great nature's second course,*

*Chief nourisher in life's feast;—*

*Lady M.*

What do you mean?



*Macb.* Still it cried, *Sleep no more!* to all the house:  
*Glamis hath murder'd sleep; and therefore Cawdor*  
*Shall sleep no more, Macbeth shall sleep no more!*

*Lady M.* Who was it that thus cried? Why, worthy  
thane,

You do unbend your noble strength, to think  
So brainsickly of things:—Go, get some water,  
And wash this filthy witness from your hand.—  
Why did you bring these daggers from the place?  
They must lie there: Go, carry them; and smear  
The sleepy grooms with blood.

*Macb.* I'll go no more:  
I am afraid to think what I have done;  
Look on't again, I dare not.

*Lady M.* Infirm of purpose!  
Give me the daggers: The sleeping, and the dead,  
Are but as pictures: 'tis the eye of childhood,  
That fears a painted devil. If he do bleed,  
I'll gild the faces of the grooms withal,  
For it must seem their guilt. [*Exit. Knocking within.*]

*Macb.* Whence is that knocking?  
How is't with me, when every noise appals me?  
What hands are here? Ha! they pluck out mine eyes!  
Will all great Neptune's ocean wash this blood  
Clean from my hand? No; this my hand will rather  
The multitudinous seas incarnardine,  
Making the green—one red.

*Re-enter Lady MACBETH.*

*Lady M.* My hands are of your colour; but I shame  
To wear a heart so white. [*Knock.*] I hear a knocking  
At the south entry:—retire we to our chamber:  
A little water clears us of this deed:

How easy is it then? Your constancy  
Hath left you unattended.—[*Knocking.*] Hark! more  
knocking:

Get on your nightgown, lest occasion call us,  
And show us to be watchers:—Be not lost  
So poorly in your thoughts.

*Macb.* To know my deed,—'twere best not know  
myself. [*Knock.*]  
Wake Duncan with thy knocking! Ay, 'would thou  
could'st! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*The same.*

*Enter a Porter.* [*Knocking within.*]

*Porter.* Here's a knocking, indeed! If a man were  
porter of hell-gate, he should have old turning the  
key. [*Knocking.*] Knock, knock, knock: Who's there,  
i'th' name of Belzebub? Here's a farmer, that hanged  
himself on the expectation of plenty: Come in time;  
have napkins enough about you; here you'll sweat  
for't. [*Knocking.*] Knock, knock: Who's there, i'th'  
other devil's name? 'Faith, here's an equivocator, that  
could swear in both the scales against either scale;  
who committed treason enough for God's sake, yet  
could not equivocate to heaven: O, come in, equivo-  
cator. [*Knocking.*] Knock, knock, knock: Who's  
there? 'Faith, here's an English tailor come hither,  
for stealing out of a French hose: Come in, tailor;  
here you may roast your goose. [*Knocking.*] Knock,  
knock: Never at quiet! What are you?—But this  
place is too cold for hell. I'll devil-porter it no fur-  
ther: I had thought to have let in some of all profes-  
sions, that go the primrose way to the everlasting

bonfire. [*Knocking.*] Anon, anon; I pray you, remember the porter. [*Opens the gate.*]

*Enter MACDUFF and LENOX.*

*Macd.* Was it so late, friend, ere you went to bed, That you do lie so late?

*Port.* 'Faith, sir, we were carousing till the second cock: and drink, sir, is a great provoker of three things.

*Macd.* What three things does drink especially provoke?

*Port.* Marry, sir, nose-painting, sleep, and urine. Lechery, sir, it provokes, and unprovokes: it provokes the desire, but it takes away the performance: Therefore, much drink may be said to be an equivocator with lechery: it makes him, and it mars him; it sets him on, and it takes him off; it persuades him, and disheartens him; makes him stand to, and not stand to: in conclusion, equivocates him in a sleep, and, giving him the lie, leaves him.

*Macd.* I believe, drink gave thee the lie last night.

*Port.* That it did, sir, i'th' very throat o' me: But I requited him for his lie; and, I think, being too strong for him, though he took up my legs sometime, yet I made a shift to cast him.

*Macd.* Is thy master stirring?  
Our knocking has awak'd him; here he comes.

*Enter MACBETH.*

*Len.* Good-morrow, noble sir!

*Macb.* Good-morrow, both!

*Macd.* Is the king stirring, worthy thane?

*Macb.* Not yet.

*Macd.* He did command me to call timely on him;  
I have almost slipp'd the hour.

*Macb.* I'll bring you to him.

*Macd.* I know, this is a joyful trouble to you;  
But yet, 'tis one.

*Macb.* The labour we delight in, physicks pain.  
This is the door.

*Macd.* I'll make so bold to call,  
For 'tis my limited service. [*Exit MACDUFF.*]

*Len.* Goes the king

From hence to-day?

*Macb.* He does:—he did appoint it so.

*Len.* The night has been unruly: Where we lay,  
Our chimneys were blown down: and, as they say,  
Lamentings heard i' th' air; strange screams of death,  
And prophecying, with accents terrible,  
Of dire combustion, and confus'd events,  
New hatch'd to th' woeful time. The obscure bird  
Clamour'd the livelong night: some say, the earth  
Was feverous, and did shake.

*Macb.* 'Twas a rough night.

*Len.* My young remembrance cannot parallel  
A fellow to it.

*Re-enter MACDUFF.*

*Macd.* O horror! horror! horror! Tongue, nor  
heart,  
Cannot conceive, nor name thee!

*Macb. Len.* What's the matter?

*Macd.* Confusion now hath made his masterpiece!  
Most sacrilegious murder hath broke ope  
The Lord's anointed temple, and stole thence  
The life o' th' building.

*Mach.* What is't you say? the life?

*Len.* Mean you his majesty?

*Macd.* Approach the chamber, and destroy your sight  
With a new Gorgon:—Do not bid me speak;  
See, and then speak yourselves.—Awake! awake!—

[*Exeunt MACBETH and LENOX.*

Ring the alarum-bell:—Murder! and treason!  
Banquo, and Donalbain! Malcolm! awake!  
Shake off this downy sleep, death's counterfeit,  
And look on death itself!—up, up, and see  
The great doom's image!—Malcolm! Banquo!  
As from your graves rise up, and walk like sprights,  
To countenance this horror! , [Bell rings.

*Enter Lady MACBETH.*

*Lady M.* What's the business,  
That such a hideous trumpet calls to parley  
The sleepers of the house? speak, speak,——

*Macd.* O, gentle lady,  
'Tis not for you to hear what I can speak:  
The repetition, in a woman's ear,  
Would murder as it fell.—O Banquo! Banquo!

*Enter BANQUO.*

Our royal master's murder'd!

*Lady M.* Woe, alas!  
What, in our house?

*Ban.* Too cruel, any where,——  
Dear Duff, I pr'ythee, contradict thyself,  
And say, it is not so.

*Re-enter MACBETH and LENOX.*

*Mach.* Had I but died an hour before this chance,

I had liv'd a blessed time; for, from this instant,  
 There's nothing serious in mortality:  
 All is but toys: renown, and grace, is dead;  
 The wine of life is drawn, and the mere lees  
 Is left this vault to brag of.

*Enter MALCOLM and DONALBAIN.*

*Don.* What is amiss?

*Macb.* You are, and do not know it:  
 The spring, the head, the fountain of your blood  
 Is stopp'd; the very source of it is stopp'd.

*Macd.* Your royal father's murder'd.

*Mal.* O, by whom?

*Len.* Those of his chamber, as it seem'd, had  
 done't:

Their hands and faces were all badg'd with blood,  
 So were their daggers, which, unwip'd, we found  
 Upon their pillows:  
 They star'd, and were distracted; no man's life  
 Was to be trusted with them.

*Macb.* O, yet I do repent me of my fury,  
 That I did kill them.

*Macd.* Wherefore did you so?

*Macb.* Who can be wise, amaz'd, temperate, and  
 furious,

Loyal and neutral, in a moment? No man:  
 The expedition of my violent love  
 Out-ran the pauser reason.—Here lay Duncan,  
 His silver skin lac'd with his golden blood;  
 And his gash'd stabs look'd like a breach in nature,  
 For ruin's wasteful entrance: there, the murderers,  
 Steep'd in the colours of their trade, their daggers  
 Unmannerly breech'd with gore: Who could refrain,

That had a heart to love, and in that heart  
 Courage, to make his love known?

*Lady M.* Help me hence, ho!

*Macd.* Look to the lady.

*Mal.* Why do we hold our tongues,  
 That most may claim this argument for ours?

*Don.* What should be spoken here,  
 Where our fate, hid within an augre-hole,  
 May rush, and seize us? Let's away; our tears  
 Are not yet brew'd.

*Mal.* Nor our strong sorrow on  
 The foot of motion.

*Ban.* Look to the lady:—

[*Lady MACBETH is carried out.*]

And when we have our naked frailties hid,  
 That suffer in exposure, let us meet,  
 And question this most bloody piece of work,  
 To know it further. Fears and scruples shake us:  
 In the great hand of God I stand; and thence,  
 Against the undivulg'd pretence I fight  
 Of treasonous malice.

*Macb.* And so do I.

*All.* So all.

*Macb.* Let's briefly put on manly readiness.  
 And meet i' th' hall together.

*All.* Well contented.

[*Exeunt all but MAL. and DON.*]

*Mal.* What will you do? Let's not consort with  
 them:

To show an unfelt sorrow, is an office  
 Which the false man does easy: I'll to England.

*Don.* To Ireland, I; our separated fortune  
 Shall keep us both the safer: where we are,

There's daggers in men's smiles: the near in blood,  
The nearer bloody.

*Mal.* This murderous shaft that's shot,  
Hath not yet lighted; and our safest way  
Is, to avoid the aim. Therefore, to horse;  
And let us not be dainty of leave-taking,  
But shift away: There's warrant in that theft  
Which steals itself, when there's no mercy left. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*Without the castle.*

*Enter Rosse and an old Man.*

*Old M.* Threescore and ten I can remember well:  
Within the volume of which time, I have seen  
Hours dreadful, and things strange; but this sore night  
Hath trifled former knowings.

*Rosse.* Ah, good father,  
Thou see'st, the heavens, as troubled with man's act,  
Threaten his bloody stage: by th' clock, 'tis day,  
And yet dark night strangles the travelling lamp:  
Is it night's predominance, or the day's shame,  
That darkness does the face of earth intomb,  
When living light should kiss it?

*Old M.* 'Tis unnatural,  
Even like the deed that's done. On Tuesday last,  
A falcon, tow'ring in her pride of place,  
Was by a mousing owl hawk'd at, and kill'd.

*Rosse.* And Duncan's horses, (a thing most strange  
and certain,  
Beauteous and swift, the minions of their race,  
Turn'd wild in nature, broke their stalls, flung out,  
Contending 'gainst obedience, as they would make  
War with mankind.



*Old M.* 'Tis said, they eat each other.

*Rosse.* They did so ; to th' amazement of mine eyes,  
That look'd upon't. Here comes the good Macduff :——

*Enter MACDUFF.*

How goes the world, sir, now ?

*Macd.* Why, see you not ?

*Rosse.* Is't known, who did this more than bloody  
deed ?

*Macd.* Those that Macbeth hath slain.

*Rosse.* Alas, the day !

What good could they pretend ?

*Macd.* They were suborn'd :  
Malcolm, and Donalbain, the king's two sons,  
Are stol'n away and fled ; which puts upon them  
Suspicion of the deed.

*Rosse.* 'Gainst nature still :  
Thriftless ambition, that wilt ravin up  
Thine own life's means !—Then 'tis most like,  
The sovereignty will fall upon Macbeth.

*Macd.* He is already nam'd ; and gone to Scone,  
To be invested.

*Rosse.* Where is Duncan's body ?

*Macd.* Carried to Colmes-kill ;  
The sacred storehouse of his predecessors,  
And guardian of their bones.

*Rosse.* Will you to Scone ?

*Macd.* No, cousin, I'll to Fife.

*Rosse.* Well, I will thither.

*Macd.* Well, may you see things well done there ;—  
adieu !——

Lest our old robes sit easier than our new !

*Rosse.* Father, farewell.

*Old M.* God's benison go with you ; and with those  
That would make good of bad, and friends of foes !

[*Exit.*]

## ACT III.

SCENE I.—Fores. *A room in the palace.*

*Enter BANQUO.*

*Ban.* Thou hast it now, King, Cawdor, Glamis, all,  
As the weird women promis'd ; and, I fear,  
Thou play'dst most foully for't : yet it was said,  
It should not stand in thy posterity ;  
But that myself should be the root, and father  
Of many kings. If there come truth from them,  
(As upon thee, Macbeth, their speeches shine,)  
Why, by the verities on thee made good,  
May they not be my oracles as well,  
And set me up in hope ? But, hush ; no more.

*Senet sounded. Enter MACBETH, as king ; Lady MACBETH, as queen ; LENOX, ROSSE, Lords, Ladies, and Attendants.*

*Macb.* Here's our chief guest.

*Lady M.* If he had been forgotten,  
It had been as a gap in our great feast,  
And all-things unbecoming.

*Macb.* To-night we hold a solemn supper, sir,  
And I'll request your presence.

*Ban.*

Let your highness

Command upon me ; to the which, my duties  
Are with a most indissoluble tie  
For ever knit.

*Macb.* Ride you this afternoon ?

*Ban.*

Ay, my good lord.

*Macb.* We should have else desir'd your good advice  
(Which still hath been both grave and prosperous,)  
In this day's council ; but we'll take to-morrow.  
Is't far you ride ?

*Ban.* As far, my lord, as will fill up the time  
'Twi'x this and supper : go not my horse the better,  
I must become a borrower of the night,  
For a dark hour, or twain.

*Macb.*

Fail not our feast.

*Ban.* My lord, I will not.

*Macb.* We hear, our bloody cousins are bestow'd  
In England, and in Ireland ; not confessing  
Their cruel parricide, filling their hearers  
With strange invention : But of that to-morrow ;  
When, therewithal, we shall have cause of state,  
Craving us jointly. Hie you to horse : Adieu,  
'Till you return at night. Goes Fleance with you ?

*Ban.* Ay, my good lord : our time does call upon us.

*Macb.* I wish your horses swift, and sure of foot ;  
And so I do commend you to their backs.

Farewell.—

[*Exit BANQUO.*]

Let every man be master of his time  
Till seven at night ; to make society  
The sweeter welcome, we will keep ourself  
Till supper-time alone : while then, God be with you.

[*Exeunt Lady MACBETH, Lords, Ladies, &c.*]

Sirrah, a word : Attend those men our pleasure ?

*Atten.* They are, my lord, without the palace gate.

*Mach.* Bring them before us.—[*Exit Atten.*] To be thus, is nothing;

But to be safely thus:—Our fears in Banquo  
Stick deep; and in his royalty of nature  
Reigns that, which would be fear'd: 'Tis much he  
dares;

And, to that dauntless temper of his mind,  
He hath a wisdom that doth guide his valour  
To act in safety. There is none, but he  
Whose being I do fear: and, under him,  
My genius is rebuk'd; as, it is said,  
Mark Antony's was by Cæsar. He chid the sisters,  
When first they put the name of King upon me,  
And bade them speak to him; then, prophet-like,  
They hail'd him father to a line of kings:  
Upon my head they plac'd a fruitless crown,  
And put a barren sceptre in my gripe,  
Thence to be wrench'd with an unlineal hand,  
No son of mine succeeding. If it be so,  
For Banquo's issue have I fil'd my mind;  
For them the gracious Duncan have I murder'd;  
Put rancours in the vessel of my peace  
Only for them; and mine eternal jewel  
Given to the common enemy of man,  
To make them kings, the seed of Banquo kings!  
Rather than so, come, fate, into the list,  
And champion me to th' utterance!—Who's there?—

*Re-enter Attendant, with two Murderers.*

Now to the door, and stay there till we call.

[*Exit Attendant.*]

Was it not yesterday we spoke together?

1 *Mur.* It was, so please your highness.

*Macb.* Well then, now  
 Have you consider'd of my speeches? Know,  
 That it was he, in the times past, which held you  
 So under fortune; which, you thought, had been  
 Our innocent self: this I made good to you  
 In our last conference; pass'd in probation with you,  
 How you were borne in hand; how cross'd; the  
                                           instruments;  
 Who wrought with them; and all things else, that might,  
 To half a soul, and a notion craz'd,  
 Say, Thus did Banquo.

*1 Mur.* You made it known to us.

*Macb.* I did so; and went further, which is now  
 Our point of second meeting. Do you find  
 Your patience so predominant in your nature,  
 That you can let this go? Are you so gospell'd,  
 To pray for this good man, and for his issue,  
 Whose heavy hand hath bow'd you to the grave,  
 And beggar'd yours for ever?

*1 Mur.* We are men, my liege.

*Macb.* Ay, in the catalogue ye go for men;  
 As hounds, and greyhounds, mongrels, spaniels, curs,  
 Shoughs, water-rugs, and demi-wolves, are cleped  
 All by the name of dogs: the valued file  
 Distinguishes the swift, the slow, the subtle,  
 The house-keeper, the hunter, every one  
 According to the gift which bounteous nature  
 Hath in him clos'd; whereby he does receive  
 Particular addition, from the bill  
 That writes them all alike: and so of men.  
 Now, if you have a station in the file,  
 And not in the worst rank of manhood, say it;  
 And I will put that business in your bosoms,

Whose execution takes your enemy off;  
 Grapples you to the heart and love of us,  
 Who wear our health but sickly in his life,  
 Which in his death were perfect.

2 *Mur.*

I am one, my liege,

Whom the vile blows and buffets of the world  
 Have so incens'd, that I am reckless what  
 I do, to spite the world.

1 *Mur.*

And I another,

So weary with disasters, tugg'd with fortune,  
 That I would set my life on any chance,  
 To mend it, or be rid on't.

*Macb.*

Both of you

Know, Banquo was your enemy.

2 *Mur.*

True, my lord.

*Macb.* So is he mine: and in such bloody distance,  
 That every minute of his being thrusts  
 Against my near'st of life: And though I could  
 With bare-fac'd power sweep him from my sight,  
 And bid my will avouch it; yet I must not,  
 For certain friends that are both his and mine,  
 Whose loves I may not drop, but wail his fall  
 Whom I myself struck down: and thence it is,  
 That I to your assistance do make love;  
 Masking the business from the common eye,  
 For sundry weighty reasons.

2 *Mur.*

We shall, my lord,

Perform what you command us.

1 *Mur.*

Though our lives——

*Macb.* Your spirits shine through you. Within this  
 hour, at most,

I will advise you where to plant yourselves.  
 Acquaint you with the perfect spy o' th' time,

The moment on't; for't must be done to-night,  
 And something from the palace; always thought,  
 That I require a clearness: And with him,  
 (To leave no rubs, nor botches, in the work,)  
 Fleance his son, that keeps him company,  
 Whose absence is no less material to me  
 Than is his father's, must embrace the fate  
 Of that dark hour. Resolve yourselves apart;  
 I'll come to you anon.

2 *Mur.* We are resolv'd, my lord.

*Macb.* I'll call upon you straight; abide within.  
 It is concluded:—Banquo, thy soul's flight,  
 If it find heaven, must find it out to-night. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*The same. Another room.*

*Enter Lady MACBETH and a Servant.*

*Lady M.* Is Banquo gone from court?

*Serv.* Ay, madam, but returns again to-night.

*Lady M.* Say to the king, I would attend his leisure  
 For a few words.

*Serv.* Madam, I will. [*Exit.*]

*Lady M.* Nought's had, all's spent,  
 Where our desire is got without content:  
 'Tis safer to be that which we destroy,  
 Than, by destruction, dwell in doubtful joy.

*Enter MACBETH.*

How now, my lord? why do you keep alone,  
 Of sorriest fancies your companions making?  
 Using those thoughts, which should indeed have died  
 With them they think on? Things without remedy,  
 Should be without regard: what's done, is done.

*Macb.* We have scotch'd the snake, not kill'd it;  
She'll close, and be herself; whilst our poor malice  
Remains in danger of her former tooth.

But let

The frame of things disjoint, both the worlds suffer,  
Ere we will eat our meal in fear, and sleep  
In the affliction of these terrible dreams,  
That shake us nightly: Better be with the dead,  
Whom we, to gain our place, have sent to peace,  
Than on the torture of the mind to lie  
In restless ecstasy. Duncan is in his grave;  
After life's fitful fever, he sleeps well;  
Treason has done his worst: nor steel, nor poison,  
Malice domestick, foreign levy, nothing,  
Can touch him further!

*Lady M.* Come on;

Gentle my lord, sleek o'er your rugged looks;  
Be bright and jovial 'mong your guests to-night.

*Macb.* So shall I, love; and so, I pray, be you:  
Let your remembrance apply to Banquo;  
Present him eminence, both with eye and tongue:  
Unsafe the while, that we  
Must lave our honours in these flattering streams;  
And make our faces vizards to our hearts,  
Disguising what they are.

*Lady M.* You must leave this.

*Macb.* O, full of scorpions is my mind, dear wife.  
Thou know'st, that Banquo, and his Fleance, lives.

*Lady M.* But in them nature's copy's not eterne.

*Macb.* There's comfort yet; they are assailable;  
Then be thou jocund: Ere the bat hath flown  
His cloister'd flight; ere, to black Hecate's summons,  
The shard-borne beetle, with his drowsy hums,



Hath rung night's yawning peal, there shall be done  
A deed of dreadful note.

*Lady M.*

What's to be done?

*Macb.* Be innocent of the knowledge, dearest chuck,  
'Till thou applaud the deed. Come, seeling night,  
Skarf up the tender eye of pitiful day;  
And, with thy bloody and invisible hand,  
Cancel, and tear to pieces, that great bond  
Which keeps me pale!—Light thickens; and the crow  
Makes wing to the rooky wood:  
Good things of day begin to droop and drowse;  
Whiles night's black agents to their prey do rouse.  
Thou marvell'st at my words: but hold thee still;  
Things, bad begun, make strong themselves by ill:  
So, pr'ythee, go with me. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*The same. A park or lawn, with a gate  
leading to the palace.*

*Enter three Murderers.*

1 *Mur.* But who did bid thee join with us?

3 *Mur.*

Macbeth.

2 *Mur.* He needs not our mistrust; since he delivers  
Our offices, and what we have to do,  
To the direction just.

1 *Mur.*

Then stand with us.

The west yet glimmers with some streaks of day:  
Now spurs the lated traveller apace,  
To gain the timely inn; and near approaches  
The subject of our watch.

3 *Mur.*

Hark! I hear horses.

*Ban.* [*Within.*] Give us a light there, ho!

2 *Mur.*

Then it is he; the rest

That are within the note of expectation,  
Already are i' th' court.

1 *Mur.* His horses go about.

3 *Mur.* Almost a mile: but he does usually,  
So all men do, from hence to th' palace gate  
Make it their walk.

*Enter BANQUO and FLEANCE, a Servant with a torch  
preceding them.*

2 *Mur.* A light, a light!

3 *Mur.* 'Tis he.

1 *Mur.* Stand to't.

*Ban.* It will be rain to-night.

1 *Mur.* Let it come down.  
[*Assaults BANQUO.*

*Ban.* O, treachery! Fly, good Fleance, fly, fly, fly;  
Thou may'st revenge.—O slave!

[*Dies. Fleance and Servant escape.*

3 *Mur.* Who did strike out the light?

1 *Mur.* Was't not the way?

3 *Mur.* There's but one down; the son is fled.

2 *Mur.* We have lost best half of our affair.

1 *Mur.* Well, let's away, and say how much is done.  
[*Exeunt.*

1 SCENE IV.—*A room of state in the palace.*

*A banquet prepared. Enter MACBETH, Lady MACBETH,  
ROSSE, LENOX, Lords, and Attendants.*

*Macb.* You know your own degrees, sit down: at first  
And last, the hearty welcome.

*Lords.* Thanks to your majesty.

*Macb.* Ourselves will mingle with society,  
And play the humble host.  
Our hostess keeps her state; but, in best time,  
We will require her welcome.

*Lady M.* Pronounce it for me, sir, to all our friends;  
For my heart speaks, they are welcome.

*Enter first Murderer, to the door.*

*Macb.* See, they encounter thee with their hearts'  
thanks:—

Both sides are even: Here I'll sit i'th' midst:  
Be large in mirth; anon, we'll drink a measure  
The table round.—There's blood upon thy face.

*Mur.* 'Tis Banquo's then.

*Macb.* 'Tis better thee without, than he within.  
Is he despatch'd?

*Mur.* My lord, his throat is cut; that I did for him.

*Macb.* Thou art the best o'th' cut-throats: Yet he's  
good,

That did the like for Fleance: if thou didst it,  
Thou art the nonpareil.

*Mur.* Most royal sir,  
Fleance is 'scap'd.

*Macb.* Then comes my fit again: I had else been perfect;  
Whole as the marble, founded as the rock;  
As broad, and general, as the casing air:  
But now, I am cabin'd, cribb'd, confin'd, bound in  
To saucy doubts and fears. But Banquo's safe?

*Mur.* Ay, my good lord: safe in a ditch he bides,  
With twenty trenched gashes on his head;  
The least a death to nature.

*Macb.* Thanks for that:—  
There the grown serpent lies; the worm, that's fled,

Hath nature that in time will venom breed,  
 No teeth for th' present.—Get thee gone; to-morrow  
 We'll hear, ourselves again. [Exit Murderer.]

*Lady M.* My royal lord,  
 You do not give the cheer: the feast is sold,  
 That is not often vouch'd, while 'tis a making,  
 'Tis given with welcome: To feed, were best at home;  
 From thence, the sauce to meat is ceremony;  
 Meeting were bare without it.

*Macb.* Sweet remembrancer!—  
 Now, good digestion wait on appetite,  
 And health on both!

*Len.* May it please your highness sit?  
 [*The Ghost of BANQUO rises, and sits in  
 MACBETH'S place.*]

*Macb.* Here had we now our country's honour roof'd,  
 Were the grac'd person of our Banquo present;  
 Who may I rather challenge for unkindness,  
 Than pity for mischance!

*Rosse.* His absence, sir,  
 Lays blame upon his promise. Please it your highness  
 To grace us with your royal company?

*Macb.* The table's full.

*Len.* Here's a place reserv'd, sir.

*Macb.* Where?

*Len.* Here, my lord. What is't that moves  
 your highness?

*Macb.* Which of you have done this?

*Lords.* What, my good lord?

*Macb.* Thou canst not say, I did it: never shake  
 Thy gory locks at me.

*Rosse.* Gentlemen, rise; his highness is not well.

*Lady M.* Sit, worthy friends:—my lord is often thus,

And hath been from his youth: 'pray you, keep seat;  
 The fit is momentary; upon a thought  
 He will again be well: If much you note him,  
 You shall offend him, and extend his passion;  
 Feed, and regard him not.—Are you a man?

*Macb.* Ay, and a bold one, that dare look on that  
 Which might appal the devil.

*Lady M.* O proper stuff!  
 This is the very painting of your fear:  
 This is the air-drawn dagger, which, you said,  
 Led you to Duncan. O, these flaws, and starts,  
 (Impostors to true fear,) would well become  
 A woman's story, at a winter's fire,  
 Authoriz'd by her grandam. Shame itself!  
 Why do you make such faces? When all's done,  
 You look but on a stool.

*Macb.* Pr'ythee, see there! behold! look! lo! how  
 say you?—

Why, what care I? If thou canst nod, speak too.—  
 If charnel-houses, and our graves, must send  
 Those that we bury, back, our monuments  
 Shall be the maws of kites. *[Ghost disappears.*

*Lady M.* What! quite unmann'd in folly?

*Macb.* If I stand here, I saw him.

*Lady M.* Fye, for shame!

*Macb.* Blood hath been shed ere now, i'th' olden  
 time,

Ere human statute purg'd the gentle weal;  
 Ay, and since too, murders have been perform'd  
 Too terrible for the ear: the times have been,  
 That, when the brains were out, the man would die,  
 And there an end: but now, they rise again,  
 With twenty mortal murders on their crowns,

And push us from our stools: This is more strange  
Than such a murder is.

*Lady M.* My worthy lord,  
Your noble friends do lack you.

*Macb.* I do forget:—  
Do not muse at me, my most worthy friends;  
I have a strange infirmity, which is nothing  
To those that know me. Come, love and health to all;  
Then I'll sit down:—Give me some wine, fill full:—  
I drink to th' general joy of the whole table,

*Ghost rises.*

And to our dear friend Banquo, whom we miss;  
Would he were here! to all, and him, we thirst,  
And all to all.

*Lords.* Our duties, and the pledge.

*Macb.* Avaunt! and quit my sight! Let the earth  
hide thee!

Thy bones are marrowless, thy blood is cold;  
Thou hast no speculation in those eyes  
Which thou dost glare with!

*Lady M.* Think of this, good peers,  
But as a thing of custom: 'tis no other;  
Only it spoils the pleasure of the time.

*Macb.* What man dare, I dare:  
Approach thou like the rugged Russian bear,  
The arm'd rhinoceros, or the Hyrcan tiger,  
Take any shape but that, and my firm nerves  
Shall never tremble: Or, be alive again,  
And dare me to the desert with thy sword;  
If trembling I inhibit thee, protest me  
The baby of a girl. Hence, horrible shadow!

*[Ghost disappears.]*

Unreal mockery, hence!—Why, so;—being gone,  
I am a man again.—Pray you, sit still.

*Lady M.* You have displac'd the mirth, broke the  
good meeting,

With most admir'd disorder.

*Macb.* Can such things be,  
And overcome us like a summer's cloud,  
Without our special wonder? You make me strange  
Even to the disposition that I owe,  
When now I think you can behold such sights,  
And keep the natural ruby of your cheeks,  
When mine are blanch'd with fear.

*Rosse.* What sights, my lord?

*Lady M.* I pray you, speak not; he grows worse and  
worse;

Question enrages him: at once, good night:—  
Stand not upon the order of your going,  
But go at once.

*Len.* Good night, and better health!  
Attend his majesty!

*Lady M.* A kind good night to all!

[*Exeunt Lords and Attendants.*]

*Macb.* It will have blood; they say, blood will have  
blood:

Stones have been known to move, and trees to speak;  
Augurs, and understood relations, have  
By magot-pies, and coughts, and rooks, brought forth  
The secret'st man of blood.—What is the night?

*Lady M.* Almost at odds with morning, which is  
which.

*Macb.* How say'st thou, that Macduff denies his  
person,  
At our great bidding?

*Lady M.* Did you send to him, sir?

*Macb.* I hear it by the way; but I will send:  
There's not a one of them, but in his house  
I keep a servant fee'd. I will to-morrow,  
(Betimes I will,) unto the weird sisters:  
More shall they speak; for now I am bent to know,  
By the worst means, the worst: for mine own good,  
All causes shall give way; I am in blood  
Stept in so far, that, should I wade no more,  
Returning were as tedious as go o'er:  
Strange things I have in head, that will to hand;  
Which must be acted, ere they may be scann'd.

*Lady M.* You lack the season of all natures, sleep.

*Macb.* Come, we'll to sleep: My strange and self-abuse

Is the initiate fear, that wants hard use:—

We are yet but young in deed.

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE V.—*The heath.*

*Thunder.* Enter HECATE, meeting the three Witches.

*1 Witch.* Why, how now, Hecate? you look angrily.

*Hec.* Have I not reason, beldams, as you are,  
Saucy, and overbold? How did you dare  
To trade and traffick with Macbeth,  
In riddles, and affairs of death;  
And I, the mistress of your charms,  
The close contriver of all harms,  
Was never call'd to bear my part,  
Or show the glory of our art?  
And, which is worse, all you have done  
Hath been but for a wayward son,



Spiteful, and wrathful; who, as others do,  
 Loves for his own ends, not for you.  
 But make amends now: Get you gone,  
 And at the pit of Acheron  
 Meet me i' th' morning; thither he  
 Will come to know his destiny.  
 Your vessels, and yqur spells, provide,  
 Your charms, and every thing beside:  
 I am for th' air; this night I'll spend  
 Unto a dismal-fatal end.  
 Great business must be wrought ere noon:  
 Upon the corner of the moon  
 There hangs a vaporous drop profound;  
 I'll catch it ere it come to ground:  
 And that, distill'd by magick slights,  
 Shall raise such artificial sprights,  
 As, by the strength of their illusion,  
 Shall draw him on to his confusion:  
 He shall spurn fate, scorn death, and bear  
 His hopes 'bove wisdom, grace, and fear:  
 And you all know, security  
 Is mortals' chiefest enemy.

Song. [*Within.*] *Come away, come away, &c.*

Hark, I am call'd; my little spirit, see,  
 Sits in a foggy cloud, and stays for me. [*Exit.*]  
 I *Witch.* Come, let's make haste; she'll soon be  
 back again. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI.—Fores. *A room in the palace.*

*Enter LENOX and another Lord.*

*Len.* My former speeches have but hit your thoughts,  
 Which can interpret further: only, I say,

Things have been strangely borne: The gracious  
Duncan

Was pitied of Macbeth:—marry, he was dead:—  
And the right-valiant Banquo walk'd too late;  
Whom, you may say, if it please you, Fleance kill'd,  
For Fleance fled. Men must not walk too late.  
Who cannot want the thought, how monstrous  
It was for Malcolm, and for Donalbain,  
To kill their gracious father? damned fact!  
How it did grieve Macbeth! did he not straight,  
In pious rage, the two delinquents tear,  
That were the slaves of drink, and thralls of sleep?  
Was not that nobly done? Ay, and wisely too;  
For 'twould have anger'd any heart alive,  
To hear the men deny it. So that, I say,  
He has borne all things well: and I do think,  
That, had he Duncan's sons under his key,  
(As, an't please heaven, he shall not,) they should find  
What 'twere to kill a father; so should Fleance.  
But, peace!—for from broad words, and 'cause he fail'd  
His presence at the tyrant's feast, I hear,  
Macduff lives in disgrace: Sir, can you tell  
Where he bestows himself?

*Lord.* The son of Duncan,  
From whom this tyrant holds the due of birth,  
Lives in the English court; and is receiv'd  
Of the most pious Edward with such grace,  
That the malevolence of fortune nothing  
Takes from his high respect: Thither Macduff  
Is gone to pray the holy king, on his aid  
To wake Northumberland, and warlike Siward:  
That, by the help of these, (with Him above  
To ratify the work,) we may again

Give to our tables meat, sleep to our nights;  
 Free from our feasts and banquets bloody knives;  
 Do faithful homage, and receive free honours,  
 All which we pine for now: And this report  
 Hath so exasperate the king, that he  
 Prepares for some attempt of war.

*Len.* Sent he to Macduff?

*Lord.* He did: and with an absolute, *Sir, not I,*  
 The cloudy messenger turns me his back,  
 And hums; as who should say, *You'll rue the time,*  
*That clogs me with this answer.*

*Len.* And that well might  
 Advise him to a caution, to hold what distance  
 His wisdom can provide. Some holy angel  
 Fly to the court of England, and unfold  
 His message ere he come; that a swift blessing  
 May soon return to this our suffering country  
 Under a hand accurs'd!

*Lord.* My prayers with him! [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—*A dark cave. In the middle, a cauldron  
 boiling.*

*Thunder.* Enter the three Witches.

1 *Witch.* Thrice the brinded cat hath mew'd.

2 *Witch.* Thrice; and once the hedge-pig whin'd.

3 *Witch.* Harper cries:—"Tis time, 'tis time.

1 *Witch*. Round about the cauldron go:  
In the poison'd entrails throw.—  
Toad, that under coldest stone,  
Days and nights hast thirty-one  
Swelter'd venom sleeping got,  
Boil thou first i' th' charmed pot!

*All*. Double, double toil and trouble;  
Fire, burn; and, cauldron, bubble.

2 *Witch*. Fillet of a fenny snake,  
In the cauldron boil and bake;  
Eye of newt, and toe of frog,  
Wool of bat, and tongue of dog,  
Adder's fork, and blind-worm's sting,  
Lizard's leg, and owlet's wing,  
For a charm of powerful trouble,  
Like a hell-broth boil and bubble.

*All*. Double, double toil and trouble;  
Fire, burn; and, cauldron, bubble.

3 *Witch*. Scale of dragon, tooth of wolf;  
Witches' mummy; maw, and gulf,  
Of the ravin'd salt-sea shark;  
Root of hemlock, digg'd i' th' dark;  
Liver of blaspheming Jew;  
Gall of goat, and slips of yew,  
Sliver'd in the moon's eclipse;  
Nose of Turk, and Tartar's lips;  
Finger of birth-strangled babe,  
Ditch-deliver'd by a drab,  
Make the gruel thick and slab:  
Add thereto a tiger's chaudron,  
For th' ingredients of our cauldron.

*All*. Double, double toil and trouble;  
Fire, burn; and, cauldron, bubble.

*2 Witch.* Cool it with a baboon's blood,  
Then the charm is firm and good.

*Enter HECATE, and the other three Witches.*

*Hec.* O, well done! I commend your pains;  
And every one shall share i' th' gains.  
And now about the cauldron sing,  
Like elves and fairies in a ring,  
Enchanting all that you put in.

SONG.

*Black spirits and white,  
Red spirits and grey;  
Mingle, mingle, mingle,  
You that mingle may.*

*2 Witch.* By the pricking of my thumbs,  
Something wicked this way comes:—  
Open, locks, whoever knocks.

*Enter MACBETH.*

*Macb.* How now, you secret, black, and midnight  
hags?  
What is't you do?

*All.* A deed without a name.

*Macb.* I conjure you, by that which you profess,  
(How'er you come to know it,) answer me:  
Though you untie the winds, and let them fight  
Against the churches; though the yesty waves  
Confound and swallow navigation up;  
Though bladed corn be lodg'd, and trees blown down;  
Though castles topple on their warders' heads;  
Though palaces, and pyramids, do slope  
Their heads to their foundations; though the treasure

Of nature's germins tumble all together,  
 Even till destruction sicken, answer me  
 To what I ask you.

1 *Witch.* Speak.

2 *Witch.* Demand.

3 *Witch.* We'll answer.

1 *Witch.* Say, if thou'dst rather hear it from our  
 mouths,

Or from our masters'.

*Macb.* Call them, let me see them.

1 *Witch.* Pour in sow's blood, that hath eaten  
 Her nine farrow; grease, that's sweaten  
 From the murderer's gibbet, throw  
 Into the flame.

*All.* Come, high, or low;  
 Thyself, and office, deftly show.

*Thunder.* An Apparition of an armed Head rises.

*Macb.* Tell me, thou unknown power;—

1 *Witch.* He knows thy thought;  
 Hear his speech, but say thou nought.

*App.* Macbeth! Macbeth! Macbeth! beware Mac-  
 duff;

Beware the thane of Fife.—Dismiss me:—Enough.

[*Descends.*]

*Macb.* What-e'er thou art, for thy good caution,  
 thanks;

Thou hast harp'd my fear aright:—But one word  
 more:—

1 *Witch.* He will not be commanded: Here's an-  
 other,

More potent than the first.

*Thunder.* An Apparition of a bloody Child rises.

*App.* Macbeth! Macbeth! Macbeth!—

*Macb.* Had I three ears, I'd hear thee.

*App.* Be bloody, bold,  
And resolute: laugh to scorn the power of man,  
For none of woman born shall harm Macbeth.

[*Descends.*]

*Macb.* Then live, Macduff; What need I fear of thee?  
But yet I'll make assurance double sure,  
And take a bond of fate: thou shalt not live;  
That I may tell pale-hearted fear, it lies,  
And sleep in spite of thunder.—What is this,

*Thunder.* An Apparition of a Child crowned, with a tree  
in his hand, rises.

That rises like the issue of a king;  
And wears upon his baby brow the round  
And top of sovereignty?

*All.* Listen, but speak not.

*App.* Be lion-mettled, proud; and take no care  
Who chafes, who frets, or where conspirers are:  
Macbeth shall never vanquish'd be, until  
Great Birnam wood to high Dunsinane hill  
Shall come against him.

[*Descends.*]

*Macb.* That will never be;  
Who can impress the forest; bid the tree  
Unfix his earth-bound root? sweet bodements! good!  
Rebellious head, rise never, till the wood  
Of Birnam rise, and our high-plac'd Macbeth  
Shall live the lease of nature, pay his breath  
To time, and mortal custom.—Yet my heart  
Throbs to know one thing; Tell me, (if your art

Can tell so much,) shall Banquo's issue ever  
Reign in this kingdom?

*All.* Seek to know no more.

*Macb.* I will be satisfied: deny me this,  
And an eternal curse fall on you! Let me know:—  
Why sinks that cauldron? and what noise is this?

[*Hautboys.*

1 *Witch.* Show! 2 *Witch.* Show! 3 *Witch.* Show!

*All.* Show his eyes, and grieve his heart;  
Come like shadows, so depart.

*Eight Kings appear, and pass over the stage in order,  
the last with a glass in his hand; BANQUO following.*

*Macb.* Thou art too like the spirit of Banquo; down!  
Thy crown does sear mine eye-balls:—And thy hair,  
Thou other gold-bound brow, is like the first:—  
A third is like the former:—Filthy hags!  
Why do you show me this?—A fourth?—Start, eyes!  
What! will the line stretch out to th' crack of doom?  
Another yet?—A seventh?—I'll see no more:—  
And yet the eighth appears, who bears a glass,  
Which shows me many more; and some I see,  
That two-fold balls and treble scepters carry:  
Horrible sight!—Ay, now, I see, 'tis true;  
For the blood-bolter'd Banquo smiles upon me,  
And points at them for his.—What, is this so?

1 *Witch.* Ay, sir, all this is so:—But why  
Stands Macbeth thus amazedly?—  
Come, sisters, cheer we up his sprights,  
And show the best of our delights;  
I'll charm the air to give a sound,  
While you perform your antique round:



That this great king may kindly say,  
Our duties did his welcome pay.

[*Musick. The Witches dance, and vanish.*]

*Macb.* Where are they? Gone?—Let this pernicious  
hour

Stand aye accursed in the calendar!—  
Come in, without there!

*Enter LENOX.*

*Len.* What's your grace's will?

*Macb.* Saw you the weird sisters?

*Len.* No, my lord.

*Macb.* Came they not by you?

*Len.* No, indeed, my lord.

*Macb.* Infected be the air whereon they ride;  
And damn'd, all those that trust them!—I did hear  
The galloping of horse: Who was't came by?

*Len.* 'Tis two or three, my lord, that bring you  
word,

Macduff is fled to England.

*Macb.* Fled to England?

*Len.* Ay, my good lord.

*Macb.* Time, thou anticipat'st my dread exploits:  
The flighty purpose never is o'ertook,  
Unless the deed go with it: From this moment,  
The very firstlings of my heart shall be  
The firstlings of my hand. And even now  
To crown my thoughts with acts, be it thought and  
done:

The castle of Macduff I will surprise;  
Seize upon Fife; give to the edge o' th' sword  
His wife, his babes, and all unfortunate souls  
That trace his line. No boasting like a fool;

This deed I'll do, before this purpose cool:  
 But no more sights!—Where are these gentlemen?  
 Come, bring me where they are. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—Fife. *A room in Macduff's castle.*

*Enter Lady MACDUFF, her Son, and Rosse.*

*L. Macd.* What had he done, to make him fly the  
 land?

*Rosse.* You must have patience, madam.

*L. Macd.* He had none:

His flight was madness: When our actions do not,  
 Our fears do make us traitors.

*Rosse.* You know not,

Whether it was his wisdom, or his fear.

*L. Macd.* Wisdom! to leave his wife, to leave his  
 babes,

His mansion, and his titles, in a place  
 From whence himself does fly? He loves us not;  
 He wants the natural touch: for the poor wren,  
 The most diminutive of birds, will fight,  
 Her young ones in her nest, against the owl.  
 All is the fear, and nothing is the love;  
 As little is the wisdom, where the flight  
 So runs against all reason.

*Rosse.* My dearest coz',

I pray you, school yourself: But, for your husband,  
 He is noble, wise, judicious, and best knows  
 The fits o' th' season. I dare not speak much further:  
 But cruel are the times, when we are traitors,  
 And do not know ourselves; when we hold rumour  
 From what we fear, yet know not what we fear;  
 But float upon a wild and violent sea,

Each way, and move.—I take my leave of you:  
 Shall not be long but I'll be here again:  
 Things at the worst will cease, or else climb upward  
 To what they were before.—My pretty cousin,  
 Blessing upon you!

*L. Macd.* Father'd he is, and yet he's fatherless.

*Rosse.* I am so much a fool, should I stay longer,  
 It would be my disgrace, and your discomfort:

I take my leave at once. [*Exit Rosse.*]

*L. Macd.* Sirrah, your father's dead;

And what will you do now? How will you live?

*Son.* As birds do, mother.

*L. Macd.* What, with worms and flies?

*Son.* With what I get, I mean; and so do they.

*L. Macd.* Poor bird! thou'dst never fear the net,  
 nor lime,

The pit-fall, nor the gin.

*Son.* Why should I, mother? Poor birds they are  
 not set for.

My father is not dead, for all your saying.

*L. Macd.* Yes, he is dead; how wilt thou do for  
 a father?

*Son.* Nay, how will you do for a husband?

*L. Macd.* Why, I can buy me twenty at any market.

*Son.* Then you'll buy 'em to sell again.

*L. Macd.* Thou speak'st with all thy wit; and yet  
 i'faith,

With wit enough for thee.

*Son.* Was my father a traitor, mother?

*L. Macd.* Ay, that he was.

*Son.* What is a traitor?

*L. Macd.* Why, one that swears and lies.

*Son.* And be all traitors, that do so?

*L. Macd.* Every one that does so, is a traitor, and must be hanged.

*Son.* And must they all be hanged, that swear and lie?

*L. Macd.* Every one.

*Son.* Who must hang them?

*L. Macd.* Why, the honest men.

*Son.* Then the liars and swearers are fools: for there are liars and swearers enough to beat the honest men, and hang up them.

*L. Macd.* Now God help thee, poor monkey! But how wilt thou do for a father?

*Son.* If he were dead, you'd weep for him: if you would not, it were a good sign that I should quickly have a new father.

*L. Macd.* Poor prattler! how thou talk'st.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Bless you, fair dame! I am not to you known, Though in your state of honour I am perfect. I doubt, some danger does approach you nearly: If you will take a homely man's advice, Be not found here; hence, with your little ones. To fright you thus, methinks, I am too savage; To do worse to you, were fell cruelty, Which is too nigh your person. Heaven preserve you! I dare abide no longer. *[Exit Messenger.]*

*L. Macd.* Whither should I fly?  
I have done no harm. But I remember now  
I am in this earthly world; where, to do harm,  
Is often laudable: to do good, sometime,  
Accounted dangerous folly: Why then, alas!

Do I put up that womanly defence,  
To say, I have done no harm?—What are these faces?

*Enter Murderers.*

*Mur.* Where is your husband?

*L. Macd.* I hope, in no place so unsanctified,  
Where such as thou may'st find him.

*Mur.* He's a traitor.

*Son.* Thou ly'st, thou shag-ear'd villain.

*Mur.* What, you egg? [*Stabbing him.*  
Young fry of treachery?

*Son.* He has kill'd me, mother: |  
Run away, I pray you. [*Dies.*

[*Exit Lady MACDUFF, crying murder, and  
pursued by the Murderers.*

SCENE III.—England. *A room in the King's palace.*

*Enter MALCOLM and MACDUFF.*

*Mal.* Let us seek out some desolate shade, and there  
Weep our sad bosoms empty.

*Macd.* Let us rather  
Hold fast the mortal sword; and, like good men,  
Bestride our down-fall'n birthdom: Each new morn,  
New widows howl; new orphans cry; new sorrows  
Strike heaven on the face, that it resounds  
As if it felt with Scotland, and yell'd out  
Like syllable of dolour.

*Mal.* What I believe, I'll wail;  
What know, believe; and, what I can redress,  
As I shall find the time to friend, I will  
What you have spoke, it may be so, perchance.

This tyrant, whose sole name blisters our tongues,  
Was once thought honest: you have lov'd him well;  
He hath not touch'd you yet. I am young; but some-  
thing

You may deserve of him through me; and wisdom  
To offer up a weak, poor, innocent lamb,  
To appease an angry god.

*Macd.* I am not treacherous.

*Mal.*

But Macbeth is.

A good and virtuous nature may recoil,  
In an imperial charge. But 'crave your pardon;  
That which you are, my thoughts cannot transpose:  
Angels are bright still, though the brightest fell:  
Though all things foul would wear the brows of  
grace,

Yet grace must still look so.

*Macd.*

I have lost my hopes.

*Mal.* Perchance, even there, where I did find my  
doubts.

Why in that rawness left you wife, and child,  
(Those precious motives, those strong knots of love,)  
Without leave-taking?—I pray you,  
Let not my jealousies be your dishonours,  
But mine own safeties:—You may be rightly just,  
Whatever I shall think.

*Macd.*

Bleed, bleed, poor country!

Great tyranny, lay thou thy basis sure,  
For goodness dares not check thee! wear thou thy  
wrongs,

Thy title is affeer'd!—Fare thee well, lord:  
I would not be the villain that thou think'st  
For the whole space that's in the tyrant's grasp,  
And the rich East to boot.

*Mal.* Be not offended:  
 I speak not as in absolute fear of you.  
 I think, our country sinks beneath the yoke;  
 It weeps, it bleeds; and each new day a gash  
 Is added to her wounds: I think, withal,  
 There would be hands uplifted in my right;  
 And here, from gracious England, have I offer  
 Of goodly thousands: But, for all this,  
 When I shall tread upon the tyrant's head,  
 Or wear it on my sword, yet my poor country  
 Shall have more vices than it had before;  
 More suffer, and more sundry ways than ever,  
 By him that shall succeed.

*Macd.* What should he be?

*Mal.* It is myself I mean: in whom I know  
 All the particulars of vice so grafted,  
 That, when they shall be open'd, black Macbeth  
 Will seem as pure as snow; and the poor state  
 Esteem him as a lamb, being compar'd  
 With my confineless harms.

*Macd.* Not in the legions  
 Of horrid hell, can come a devil more damn'd  
 In evils, to top Macbeth.

*Mal.* I grant him bloody,  
 Luxurious, avaricious, false, deceitful,  
 Sudden, malicious, smacking of every sin  
 That has a name: But there's no bottom, none,  
 In my voluptuousness: your wives, your daughters,  
 Your matrons, and your maids, could not fill up  
 The cistern of my lust; and my desire  
 All continent impediments would o'er-bear,  
 That did oppose my will: Better Macbeth,  
 Than such a one to reign.

*Macd.* Boundless intemperance  
 In nature is a tyranny; it hath been  
 Th' untimely emptying of the happy throne,  
 And fall of many kings. But fear not yet  
 To take upon you what is yours: you may  
 Convey your pleasures in a spacious plenty,  
 And yet seem cold, the time you may so hood-wink.  
 We have willing dames enough; there cannot be  
 That vulture in you, to devour so many  
 As will to greatness dedicate themselves,  
 Finding it so inclin'd.

*Mal.* With this, there grows,  
 In my most ill-compos'd affection, such  
 A stanchless avarice, that, were I king,  
 I should cut off the nobles for their lands;  
 Desire his jewels, and this other's house:  
 And my more-having would be as a sauce  
 To make me hunger more; that I should forge  
 Quarrels unjust against the good, and loyal,  
 Destroying them for wealth.

*Macd.* This avarice  
 Sticks deeper; grows with more pernicious root  
 Than summer-seeding lust: and it hath been  
 The sword of our slain kings: Yet do not fear;  
 Scotland hath foysons to fill up your will,  
 Of your mere own: All these are portable,  
 With other graces weigh'd.

*Mal.* But I have none: The king-becoming graces,  
 As justice, verity, temperance, stableness,  
 Bounty, perseverance, mercy, lowliness,  
 Devotion, patience, courage, fortitude,  
 I have no relish of them; but abound  
 In the division of each several crime,



Acting it many ways. Nay, had I power, I should  
 Pour the sweet milk of concord into hell,  
 Uproar the universal peace, confound  
 All unity on earth.

*Macd.* O Scotland! Scotland!

*Mal.* If such a one be fit to govern, speak:  
 I am as I have spoken.

*Macd.* Fit to govern!

No, not to live.—O nation miserable,  
 With an untitled tyrant bloody-scepter'd,  
 When shalt thou see thy wholesome days again?  
 Since that the truest issue of thy throne  
 By his own interdiction stands accurs'd,  
 And does blaspheme his breed?—Thy royal father  
 Was a most sainted king; the queen, that bore thee,  
 Oftner upon her knees than on her feet,  
 Died every day she lived. Fare thee well!  
 These evils, thou repeat'st upon thyself,  
 Have banish'd me from Scotland.—O, my breast,  
 Thy hope ends here!

*Mal.* Macduff, this noble passion,  
 Child of integrity, hath from my soul  
 Wip'd the black scruples, reconcil'd my thoughts  
 To thy good truth and honour. Devilish Macbeth  
 By many of these trains hath sought to win me  
 Into his power; and modest wisdom plucks me  
 From over-credulous haste: But God above  
 Deal between thee and me! for even now  
 I put myself to thy direction, and  
 Unspeak mine own detraction; here abjure  
 The taints and blames I laid upon myself,  
 For strangers to my nature. I am yet  
 Unknown to woman; never was forsworn;

Scarcely have coveted what was mine own ;  
 At no time broke my faith ; would not betray  
 The devil to his fellow ; and delight  
 No less in truth, than life : my first false speaking  
 Was this upon myself : What I am truly,  
 Is thine, and my poor country's, to command :  
 Whither, indeed, before thy here-approach,  
 Old Siward, with ten thousand warlike men,  
 All ready at a point, was setting forth :  
 Now we'll together ; And the chance, of goodness,  
 Be like our warranted quarrel ! Why are you silent ?  
*Macd.* Such welcome and unwelcome things at once,  
 'Tis hard to reconcile.

*Enter a Doctor.*

*Mal.* Well ; more anon.—Comes the king forth,  
 I pray you ?

*Doct.* Ay, sir : there are a crew of wretched souls,  
 That stay his cure : their malady convinces  
 The great assay of art ; but, at his touch,  
 Such sanctity hath heaven given his hand,  
 They presently amend.

*Mal.* I thank you, doctor.

[*Exit Doctor.*]

*Macd.* What's the disease he means ?

*Mal.* 'Tis call'd the evil :

A most miraculous work in this good king ;  
 Which often, since my here-remain in England,  
 I have seen him do. How he solicits heaven,  
 Himself best knows : but strangely-visited people,  
 All swoln and ulcerous, pitiful to the eye,  
 The mere despair of surgery, he cures ;  
 Hanging a golden stamp about their necks,

Put on with holy prayers: and 'tis spoken,  
 To the succeeding royalty he leaves  
 The healing benediction. With this strange virtue,  
 He hath a heavenly gift of prophecy;  
 And sundry blessings hang about his throne,  
 That speak him full of grace.

*Enter ROSSE.*

*Macd.* See, who comes here?

*Mal.* My countryman; but yet I know him not.

*Macd.* My ever-gentle cousin, welcome hither.

*Mal.* I know him now: Good God, betimes remove  
 The means that make us strangers!

*Rosse.* Sir, Amen.

*Macd.* Stands Scotland where it did?

*Rosse.* Alas, poor country,  
 Almost afraid to know itself! It cannot  
 Be call'd our mother, but our grave: where nothing,  
 But who knows nothing, is once seen to smile;  
 Where sighs, and groans, and shrieks that rent the air,  
 Are made, not mark'd; where violent sorrow seems  
 A modern ecstasy; the dead man's knell  
 Is there scarce ask'd, for who; and good men's lives  
 Expire before the flowers in their caps,  
 Dying, or ere they sicken.

*Macd.* O, relation,  
 Too nice, and yet too true!

*Mal.* What is the newest grief?

*Rosse.* That of an hour's age doth hiss the speaker;  
 Each minute teems a new one.

*Macd.* How does my wife?

*Rosse.* Why, well.

*Macd.* And all my children?

*Rosse.* Well too.

*Macd.* The tyrant has not batter'd at their peace?

*Rosse.* No; they were well at peace, when I did leave them.

*Macd.* Be not a niggard of your speech; How goes it?

*Rosse.* When I came hither to transport the tidings, Which I have heavily borne, there ran a rumour Of many worthy fellows that were out; Which was to my belief witness'd the rather, For that I saw the tyrant's power a-foot: Now is the time of help; your eye in Scotland Would create soldiers, make our women fight, To doff their dire distresses.

*Mal.* Be it their comfort, We are coming thither: gracious England hath Lent us good Siward, and ten thousand men; An older, and a better soldier, none That Christendom gives out.

*Rosse.* 'Would I could answer This comfort with the like! But I have words, That would be howl'd out in the desert air, Where hearing should not latch them.

*Macd.* What concern they? The general cause? or is it a fee-grief, Due to some single breast?

*Rosse.* No mind, that's honest, But in it shares some woe; though the main part Pertains to you alone.

*Macd.* If it be mine, Keep it not from me, quickly let me have it.

*Rosse.* Let not your ears despise my tongue for ever,

Which shall possess them with the heaviest sound,  
That ever yet they heard.

*Macd.* Humph! I guess at it.

*Rosse.* Your castle is surpriz'd; your wife, and babes,  
Savagely slaughter'd: to relate the manner,  
Were, on the quarry of these murder'd deer,  
To add the death of you.

*Mal.* Merciful heaven!—

What, man! ne'er pull your hat upon your brows;  
Give sorrow words: the grief, that does not speak,  
Whispers the o'er-fraught heart, and bids it break.

*Macd.* My children too?

*Rosse.* Wife, children, servants, all

That could be found.

*Macd.* And I must be from thence!

My wife kill'd too?

*Rosse.* I have said.

*Mal.* Be comforted:

Let's make us med'cines of our great revenge,  
To cure this deadly grief.

*Macd.* He has no children.—All my pretty ones?

Did you say, all?—O, hell-kite!—All?

What, all my pretty chickens, and their dam,  
At one fell swoop?

*Mal.* Dispute it like a man.

*Macd.* I shall do so;

But I must also feel it as a man:

I cannot but remember such things were,  
That were most precious to me.—Did heaven look on,  
And would not take their part? Sinful Macduff,  
They were all struck for thee! naught that I am,  
Not for their own demerits, but for mine,  
Fell slaughter on their souls: Heaven rest them now!

*Mal.* Be this the whetstone of your sword: let grief  
Convert to anger; blunt not the heart, enrage it.

*Macd.* O, I could play the woman with mine eyes,  
And braggart with my tongue!—But, gentle heaven,  
Cut short all intermission; front to front,  
Bring thou this fiend of Scotland, and myself;  
Within my sword's length set him; if he 'scape,  
Heaven forgive him too!

*Mal.* This tune goes manly.  
Come, go we to the king; our power is ready;  
Our lack is nothing but our leave: Macbeth  
Is ripe for shaking, and the powers above  
Put on their instruments. Receive what cheer you may;  
The night is long, that never finds the day. [*Exeunt.*]

---

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—Dunsinane. *A room in the castle.*

*Enter a Doctor of Physick, and a waiting Gentlewoman.*

*Doct.* I have two nights watched with you, but can  
perceive no truth in your report. When was it she last  
walked?

*Gent.* Since his majesty went into the field, I have  
seen her rise from her bed, throw her night-gown upon  
her, unlock her closet, take forth paper, fold it, write  
upon it, read it, afterwards seal it, and again return  
to bed; yet all this while in a most fast sleep.

*Doct.* A great perturbation in nature! to receive at once the benefit of sleep, and do the effects of watching.—In this slumbry agitation, besides her walking, and other actual performances, what, at any time, have you heard her say?

*Gent.* That, sir, which I will not report after her.

*Doct.* You may, to me; and 'tis most meet you should.

*Gent.* Neither to you, nor any one; having no witness to confirm my speech.

*Enter Lady MACBETH, with a taper.*

Lo you, here she comes! This is her very guise; and, upon my life, fast asleep. Observe her; stand close.

*Doct.* How came she by that light?

*Gent.* Why, it stood by her: she has light by her continually; 'tis her command.

*Doct.* You see, her eyes are open.

*Gent.* Ay, but their sense is shut.

*Doct.* What is it she does now? Look, how she rubs her hands.

*Gent.* It is an accustomed action with her, to seem thus washing her hands; I have known her continue in this a quarter of an hour.

*Lady M.* Yet here's a spot.

*Doct.* Hark, she speaks: I will set down what comes from her, to satisfy my remembrance the more strongly.

*Lady M.* Out, damned spot! out, I say!—One; Two; Why, then 'tis time to do't:—Hell is murky!—Fye, my lord, fye! a soldier, and afraid? What need we fear who knows it, when none can call our power to account?—Yet who would have thought the old man to have had so much blood in him?

*Doct.* Do you mark that?

*Lady M.* The thane of Fife had a wife; Where is she now?—What, will these hands ne'er be clean?—No more o' that, my lord, no more o' that: you may all with this starting.

*Doct.* Go to, go to; you have known what you should not.

*Gent.* She has spoke what she should not, I am sure of that: Heaven knows what she has known.

*Lady M.* Here's the smell of the blood still: all the perfumes of Arabia will not sweeten this little hand. Oh! oh! oh!

*Doct.* What a sigh is there! The heart is sorely charged.

*Gent.* I would not have such a heart in my bosom, for the dignity of the whole body.

*Doct.* Well, well, well,—

*Gent.* 'Pray God, it be, sir.

*Doct.* This disease is beyond my practice: Yet I have known those which have walked in their sleep, who have died holily in their beds.

*Lady M.* Wash your hands, put on your night-gown; look not so pale:—I tell you yet again, Banquo's buried; he cannot come out of his grave.

*Doct.* Even so?

*Lady M.* To bed, to bed; there's knocking at the gate. Come, come, come, come, give me your hand; What's done, cannot be undone: To bed, to bed, to bed. [*Erit Lady Macbeth.*]

*Doct.* Will she go now to bed?

*Gent.* Directly.

*Doct.* Foul whisperings are abroad: Unnatural deeds Do breed unnatural troubles: Infected minds



To their deaf pillows will discharge their secrets.  
 More needs she the divine, than the physician.—  
 God, God, forgive us all! Look after her;  
 Remove from her the means of all annoyance,  
 And still keep eyes upon her :—So, good night:  
 My mind she has mated, and amaz'd my sight:  
 I think, but dare not speak.

*Gent.*

Good night, good doctor.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*The country near Dunsinane.*

*Enter, with drum and colours, MENTETH, CATHNESS,  
 ANGUS, LENOX, and Soldiers.*

*Ment.* The English power is near, led on by Malcolm,  
 His uncle Siward, and the good Macduff.  
 Revenges burn in them : for their dear causes  
 Would, to the bleeding, and the grim alarm,  
 Excite the mortified man.

*Ang.*

Near Birnam wood

Shall we well meet them ; that way are they coming.

*Cath.* Who knows, if Donalbain be with his brother?

*Len.* For certain, sir, he is not: I have a file

Of all the gentry; there is Siward's son,  
 And many unrough youths, that even now  
 Protest their first of manhood.

*Ment.*

What does the tyrant?

*Cath.* Great Dunsinane he strongly fortifies:  
 Some say, he's mad; others, that lesser hate him,  
 Do call it valiant fury: but, for certain,  
 He cannot buckle his distemper'd cause  
 Within the belt of rule.

*Ang.*

Now does he feel

His secret murders sticking on his hands;  
 Now minutely revolts upbraid his faith-breach;  
 Those he commands, move only in command,  
 Nothing in love: now does he feel his title  
 Hang loose about him, like a giant's robe  
 Upon a dwarfish thief.

*Ment.* Who then shall blame  
 His pester'd senses to recoil, and start,  
 When all that is within him does condemn  
 Itself, for being there?

*Cath.* Well, march we on,  
 To give obedience where 'tis truly ow'd:  
 Meet we the medecin of the sickly weal;  
 And with him pour we, in our country's purge,  
 Each drop of us.

*Len.* Or so much as it needs,  
 To dew the sovereign flower, and drown the weeds.  
 Make we our march towards Birnam.

[*Exeunt, marching.*]

SCENE III.—Dunsinane. *A room in the castle.*

*Enter MACBETH, Doctor, and Attendants.*

*Macb.* Bring me no more reports; let them fly all;  
 Till Birnam wood remove to Dunsinane,  
 I cannot taint with fear. What's the boy Malcolm?  
 Was he not born of woman? The spirits that know  
 All mortal consequents, pronounc'd me thus:  
*Fear not, Macbeth; no man, that's born of woman,  
 Shall e'er have power on thee.*—Then fly, false thanes,  
 And mingle with the English epicures:  
 The mind I sway by, and the heart I bear,  
 Shall never sagg with doubt, nor shake with fear.

*Enter a Servant.*

The devil damn thee black, thou cream-fac'd loon!  
Where got'st thou that goose look?

*Serv.* There is ten thousand——

*Macb.* Geese, villain?

*Serv.* Soldiers, sir.

*Macb.* Go, prick thy face, and over-red thy fear,  
Thou lily-liver'd boy. What soldiers, patch?  
Death of thy soul! those linen cheeks of thine  
Are counsellors to fear. What soldiers, whey-face?

*Serv.* The English force, so please you.

*Macb.* Take thy face hence.—Seyton!—I am sick at  
heart,

When I behold—Seyton, I say!—This push  
Will cheer me ever, or disseat me now.

I have liv'd long enough: my way of life  
Is fallen into the sear, the yellow leaf:

And that which should accompany old age,  
As honour, love, obedience, troops of friends,

I must not look to have; but, in their stead,  
Curses, not loud, but deep, mouth-honour, breath,  
Which the poor heart would fain deny, but dare not.  
Seyton!——

*Enter SEYTON.*

*Sey.* What is your gracious pleasure?

*Macb.* What news more?

*Sey.* All is confirm'd, my lord, which was reported.

*Macb.* I'll fight, till from my bones my flesh be  
hack'd.

Give me my armour.

*Sey.* 'Tis not needed yet.

*Macb.* I'll put it on.

Send out more horses, skirr the country round;  
Hang those that talk of fear.—Give me mine armour.—  
How does your patient, doctor?

*Doct.* Not so sick, my lord,  
As she is troubled with thick-coming fancies,  
That keep her from her rest.

*Macb.* Cure her of that:  
Canst thou not minister to a mind diseas'd;  
Pluck from the memory a rooted sorrow;  
Raze out the written troubles of the brain;  
And, with some sweet oblivious antidote,  
Cleanse the stuff'd bosom of that perilous stuff,  
Which weighs upon the heart?

*Doct.* Therein the patient  
Must minister to himself.

*Macb.* Throw physick to the dogs, I'll none of it.—  
Come, put mine armour on; give me my staff:—  
Seyton, send out.—Doctor, the thanes fly from me:—  
Come, sir, despatch:—If thou could'st, doctor, cast  
The water of my land, find her disease,  
And purge it to a sound and pristine health,  
I would applaud thee to the very echo,  
That should applaud again.—Pull't off, I say.—  
What rhubarb, senna, or what purgative drug,  
Would scour these English hence?—Hearest thou of  
them?

*Doct.* Ay, my good lord; your royal preparation  
Makes us hear something.

*Macb.* Bring it after me.—  
I will not be afraid of death and bane,  
Till Birnam forest come to Dunsinane. [Exit.

'*Doct.* Were I from Dunsinane away and clear,  
Profit again should hardly draw me here. [Exit

SCENE IV.—Country near Dunsinane: A wood in view

*Enter, with drum and colours, MALCOLM, old SIWART  
and his SON, MACDUFF, MENTETH, CATHNESS, ANGUS,  
LENOX, ROSSE, and Soldiers, marching.*

'*Mal.* Cousins, I hope, the days are near at hand,  
That chambers will be safe.

*Ment.* We doubt it nothing.

*Siw.* What wood is this before us?

*Ment.* The wood of Birnam.

*Mal.* Let every soldier hew him down a bough,  
And bear't before him; thereby shall we shadow  
The numbers of our host, and make discovery  
Err in report of us.

*Sold.* It shall be done.

*Siw.* We learn no other, but the confident tyrant  
Keeps still in Dunsinane, and will endure  
Our setting down before't.

*Mal.* 'Tis his main hope:  
For where there is advantage to be given,  
Both more and less have given him the revolt;  
And none serve with him but constrained things,  
Whose hearts are absent too.

*Macd.* Let our just censures  
Attend the true event, and put we on  
Industrious soldiership.

*Siw.* The time approaches,  
That will with due decision make us know  
What we shall say we have, and what we owe.

Thoughts speculative their unsure hopes relate;  
 But certain issue strokes must arbitrate:  
 Towards which, advance the war. [*Exeunt, marching.*]

SCENE V.—Dunsinane. *Within the castle.*

*Enter, with drums and colours, MACBETH, SEYTON, and Soldiers.*

*Macb.* Hang out our banners on the outward walls,  
 The cry is still, *They come*: Our castle's strength  
 Will laugh a siege to scorn: here let them lie,  
 Till famine, and the ague, eat them up:  
 Were they not forc'd with those that should be ours,  
 We might have met them dareful, beard to beard,  
 And beat them backward home. What is that noise?

[*A cry within, of women.*]

*Sey.* It is the cry of women, my good lord.

*Macb.* I have almost forgot the taste of fears:  
 The time has been, my senses would have cool'd  
 To hear a night-shriek; and my fell of hair  
 Would at a dismal treatise rouse, and stir  
 As life were in't: I have supp'd full with horrors;  
 Direness, familiar to my slaught'rous thoughts,  
 Cannot once start me.—Wherefore was that cry?

*Sey.* The queen, my lord, is dead.

*Macb.* She should have died hereafter;  
 There would have been a time for such a word.—  
 To-morrow, and to-morrow, and to-morrow,  
 Creeps in this petty pace from day to day,  
 To the last syllable of recorded time;  
 And all our yesterdays have lighted fools  
 The way to dusty death. Out, out, brief candle!  
 Life's but a walking shadow; a poor player,

That struts and frets his hour upon the stage,  
 And then is heard no more: it is a tale  
 Told by an idiot, full of sound and fury,  
 Signifying nothing.—

*Enter a Messenger.*

Thou com'st to use thy tongue; thy story quickly.

*Mess.* Gracious my lord,  
 I shall report that which I say I saw,  
 But know not how to do it.

*Macb.* Well, say, sir.

*Mess.* As I did stand my watch upon the hill,  
 I look'd toward Birnam, and anon, methought,  
 The wood began to move.

*Macb.* Liar, and slave! [*Striking him.*]

*Mess.* Let me endure your wrath, if't be not so:  
 Within this three mile may you see it coming;  
 I say, a moving grove.

*Macb.* If thou speak'st false,  
 Upon the next tree shalt thou hang alive,  
 Till famine cling thee: if thy speech be sooth,  
 I care not if thou dost for me as much.—  
 I pull in resolution; and begin  
 To doubt th' equivocation of the fiend,  
 That lies like truth: *Fear not, till Birnam wood  
 Do come to Dunsinane;*—and now a wood  
 Comes toward Dunsinane.—Arm, arm, and out!—  
 If this, which he avouches, does appear,  
 There is nor flying hence, nor tarrying here.  
 I 'gin to be a-weary of the sun,  
 And wish th' estate o' th' world were now undone.—  
 Ring the alarum bell:—Blow, wind! come, wrack!  
 At least we'll die with harness on our back. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI.—*The same. A plain before the castle.*

*Enter, with drums and colours, MALCOLM, old SIWARD, MACDUFF, &c. and their army, with boughs.*

*Mal.* Now near enough; your leavy screens throw down,

And show like those you are:—You, worthy uncle, Shall, with my cousin, your right-noble son, Lead our first battle: worthy Macduff, and we, Shall take upon's what else remains to do, According to our order.

*Siw.* Fare you well.—

Do we but find the tyrant's power to-night, Let us be beaten, if we cannot fight.

*Macd.* Make all our trumpets speak; give them all breath,

Those clamorous harbingers of blood and death.

[*Exeunt. Alarums continued.*]

SCENE VII.—*The same. Another part of the plain.*

*Enter MACBETH.*

*Macb.* They have tied me to a stake; I cannot fly, But, bear-like, I must fight the course.—What's he, That was not born of woman? Such a one Am I to fear, or none.

*Enter young SIWARD.*

*Yo. Siw.* What is thy name?

*Macb.* Thou'lt be afraid to hear it.

*Yo. Siw.* No; though thou call'st thyself a hotter name Than any is in hell.



*Macb.* My name's Macbeth.

*Yo. Siw.* The devil himself could not pronounce  
a title

More hateful to mine ear.

*Macb.* No, nor more fearful.

*Yo. Siw.* Thou liest, abhorred tyrant; with my sword  
I'll prove the lie thou speak'st.

[*They fight, and young Siward is slain.*]

*Macb.* Thou wast born of woman.—  
But swords I smile at, weapons laugh to scorn,  
Brandish'd by man that's of a woman born. [*Exit.*]

*Alarums.* Enter MACDUFF.

*Macd.* That way the noise is:—Tyrant, show thy face:  
If thou be'st slain, and with no stroke of mine,  
My wife and children's ghosts will haunt me still.  
I cannot strike at wretched kernes, whose arms  
Are hir'd to bear their staves; either thou, Macbeth,  
Or else my sword, with an unbatter'd edge,  
I sheathe again undeeded. There thou should'st be;  
By this great clatter, one of greatest note  
Seems bruided: Let me find him, fortune!  
And more I beg not. [*Exit. Alarum.*]

Enter MALCOLM and old SIWARD.

*Siw.* This way, my lord;—the castle's gently render'd:

The tyrant's people on both sides do fight;  
The noble thanes do bravely in the war;  
The day almost itself professes yours,  
And little is to do.

*Mal.* We have met with foes  
That strike beside us.

*Siw.*

Enter, sir, the castle.

[*Exeunt. Alarum.*]*Re-enter MACBETH.*

*Macb.* Why should I play the Roman fool, and die  
On mine own sword? whiles I see lives, the gashes  
Do better upon them.

*Re-enter MACDUFF.**Macd.* Turn, hell-hound, turn.

*Macb.* Of all men else I have avoided thee:  
But get thee back, my soul is too much charg'd  
With blood of thine already.

*Macd.* I have no words,  
My voice is in my sword; thou bloodier villain  
Than terms can give thee out! [They fight.]

*Macb.* Thou losest labour:  
As easy may'st thou the intrenchant air  
With thy keen sword impress, as make me bleed:  
Let fall thy blade on vulnerable crests;  
I bear a charmed life, which must not yield  
To one of woman born.

*Macd.* Despair thy charm;  
And let the angel, whom thou still hast serv'd,  
Tell thee, Macduff was from his mother's womb  
Untimely ripp'd.

*Macb.* Accurs'd be that tongue that tells me so,  
For it hath cow'd my better part of man!  
And be these juggling fiends no more believ'd,  
That palter with us in a double sense;  
That keep the word of promise to our ear,  
And break it to our hope.—I'll not fight with thee.

*Macd.* Then yield thee, coward,

And live to be the show and gaze o' th' time.  
 We'll have thee, as our rarer monsters are,  
 Painted upon a pole; and underwrit,  
*Here may you see the tyrant.*

*Macb.* I'll not yield,  
 To kiss the ground before young Malcolm's feet,  
 And to be baited with the rabble's curse.  
 Though Birnam wood be come to Dunsinane,  
 And thou oppos'd, being of no woman born,  
 Yet I will try the last: Before my body  
 I throw my warlike shield: lay on, Macduff;  
 And damn'd be him that first cries, *Hold, enough.*

*[Exeunt, fighting.]*

*Retreat. Flourish. Re-enter, with drum and colours,*  
 MALCOLM, old SIWARD, ROSSE, LENOX, ANGUS,  
 CATHNESS, MENTETH, and Soldiers.

*Mal.* I would, the friends we miss were safe arriv'd.

*Siw.* Some must go off: and yet, by these I see,  
 So great a day as this is cheaply bought.

*Mal.* Macduff is missing, and your noble son.

*Rosse.* Your son, my lord, has paid a soldier's  
 debt:

He only liv'd but till he was a man;  
 The which no sooner had his prowess confirm'd  
 In the unshrinking station where he fought,  
 But like a man he died.

*Siw.* Then he is dead?

*Rosse.* Ay, and brought off the field: your cause of  
 sorrow

Must not be measur'd by his worth, for then  
 It hath no end.

*Siw.* Had he his hurts before?

*Rosse.* Ay, on the front.

*Siw.* Why then, God's soldier be he!  
Had I as many sons as I have hairs,  
I would not wish them to a fairer death:  
And so his knell is knoll'd.

*Mal.* He's worth more sorrow,  
And that I'll spend for him.

*Siw.* He's worth no more;  
They say, he parted well, and paid his score:  
So, God be with him!—Here comes newer comfort.

*Re-enter MACDUFF, with MACBETH'S head on a pole.*

*Macd.* Hail, king! for so thou art: Behold, where  
stands

Th' usurper's cursed head: the time is free:  
I see thee compass'd with thy kingdom's pearl,  
That speak my salutation in their minds;  
Whose voices I desire aloud with mine,—  
Hail, king of Scotland!

*All.* King of Scotland, hail!

[*Flourish.*]

*Mal.* We shall not spend a large expence of time,  
Before we reckon with your several loves,  
And make us even with you. My thanes and kinsmen,  
Henceforth be earls, the first that ever Scotland  
In such an honour nam'd. What's more to do,  
Which would be planted newly with the time,—  
As calling home our exil'd friends abroad,  
That fled the snares of watchful tyranny;  
Producing forth the cruel ministers  
Of this dead butcher, and his fiend-like queen;  
Who, as 'tis thought, by self and violent hands

Took off her life;—This, and what needful else  
That calls upon us, by the grace of Grace,  
We will perform in measure, time, and place:  
So thanks to all at once, and to each one,  
Whom we invite to see us crown'd at Scone.

[*Flourish. Exeunt.*]

## ANNOTATIONS

ON

## M A C B E T H.

### ACT I.

LINE 11. *Fair is foul, and foul is fair:*] The meaning is, that to us, perverse and malignant as we are, fair is foul, and foul is fair. JOHNSON.

Line 28. *And fortune, on his damned quarrel smiling,*] *Quarrel* was formerly used for *cause*, or for the *occasion of a quarrel*, and is to be found in that sense in Holinshed's account of the story of Macbeth, who, at the creation of the prince of Cumberland, thought, says the historian, that he had a just *quarrel*, to endeavour after the crown. The sense therefore is, *fortune smiling on his execrable cause, &c.*

JOHNSON.

Line 4. — flout the sky,] This poetical image of banners mocking or beating the air, as in defiance, is very fine.

Line 80. *with self-comparisons,*] i. e. gave him as good as he brought, shew'd he was his equal. WARBURTON.

Line 103. *Aroint thee, witch!*] In one of the folio editions the reading is *Anoint thee*, in a sense very consistent with the common accounts of witches, who are related to perform many supernatural acts by the means of unguents, and

particularly to fly through the air to the places where they meet at their hellish festivals. In this sense, *Aroint thee, Witch*, will mean, *Away, Witch, to your infernal assembly*. This reading I was inclined to favour, because I had met with the word *aroint* in no other author; till looking into Hearne's Collections I found it in a very old drawing, that he has published, in which St. Patrick is represented visiting hell, and putting the devils into great confusion by his presence, of whom one that is driving the damned before him with a prong, has a label issuing out of his mouth with these words, *Out, out arongt*, of which the last is evidently the same with *aroint*, and used in the same sense as in this passage.

JOHNSON.

Line 103. ——— ronyon cries.] i. e. scabby or mangy woman. Fr. *rogneux, royne, scurf*.

STEVENS.

Line 106. *And, like a rat without a tail*,] It should be remembered (as it was the belief of the times) that though a witch could assume the form of any animal she pleased, the tail would still be wanting.

The reason given by some of the old writers, for such a deficiency, is, that though the hands and feet, by an easy change, might be converted into the four paws of a beast, there was still no part about a woman which corresponded with the length of tail common to almost all four-footed creatures.

STEVENS.

Line 118. *He shall live a man forbid*: ] *Forbid* implies to *prohibit*, in opposition to the word *bid* in its present sense: it signifies, by the same kind of opposition, to *curse*, when it is derived from the same word in its primitive meaning.

JOHNSON.

Line 120.] *Shall he dwindle, &c.*] This mischief was supposed to be put in execution by means of a waxen figure, which represented the person who was to be consumed by slow degrees.

STEVENS.

Line 141. *That man may question?*] Are ye any beings with which man is permitted to hold converse, or of which it is lawful to ask questions. JOHNSON.

Line 150. — *thane of Cawdor?*] In Johnson's Tour to the Western Islands of Scotland, we find that one antient tower, with its battlements and winding stairs, of the castle of *Cawdor* still remains, from which Macbeth drew this title.

Line 157. *Are ye fantastical,*] By *fantastical*, he means creatures of *fantasy*, or imagination; the question is, Are these real beings before us, or are we deceived by illusions of fancy? JOHNSON.

Line 192. — *caten of the insane root,*] The *insane root* means the root which causes insanity.

Line 207. — *as thick as tale,*] Meaning that the news came as thick as a tale can travel with the post. JOHNSON.

Line 327. — *hence to Inverness,*] In Johnson's Journey to the Western islands of Scotland, we find that the walls of Macbeth's castle at *Inverness* are yet standing.

Line 391. — *The raven himself is hoarse,*] Dr. Warburton reads, — *The raven himself's not hoarse,* yet I think the present word may stand. The messenger, says the servant, had hardly breath to make up his message; to which the lady answers mentally, that he may well want breath, such a message would add hoarseness to the raven. That even the bird, whose harsh voice is accustomed to predict calamities, could not croak the entrance of Duncan but in a note of unwonted harshness. JOHNSON.

Line 457. *We rest your hermits.*] *Hermits for beadsmen.*

WARBURTON.

That is, we as hermits shall always pray for you.

STEVENS.



Line 551. ——— *who shall bear the guilt  
Of our great quell?*] *Quell* is *murder, manquellers* being in the old language the term for which *murderers* is now used. JOHNSON.

## ACT II.

Line 10. ——— *Merciful powers!*  
*Restrain in me the cursed thoughts, that nature  
Gives way to in repose!*] It is apparent from what Banquo says afterwards, that he had been solicited in a dream to do something in consequence of the prophecy of the witches, that his waking senses were shocked at; and Shakspeare has here finely contrasted his character with that of Macbeth. Banquo is praying against being tempted to encourage thoughts of guilt even in his sleep; while Macbeth is hurrying into temptation, and revolving in his mind every scheme, however flagitious, that may assist him to complete his purpose. The one is unwilling to sleep, lest the same phantoms should assail his resolution again, while the other is depriving himself of rest through impatience to commit the murder. STEEVENS.

Line 33. *If you shall cleave to my consent, when 'tis,*] Macbeth expresses his thought with affected obscurity; he does not mention the royalty, though he apparently has it in his mind, *If you shall cleave to my consent*, if you shall concur with me when I determine to accept the crown, *when 'tis*, when that happens which the prediction promises, *it shall make honour for you*. JOHNSON.

Line 62. ——— *Now o'er the one half world  
Nature seems dead,*] That is, *over our hemisphere all action and motion seemed to have ceased*. This image, which is perhaps the most striking that poetry can

produce, has been adopted by Dryden, in his *Conquest of Mexico* :

*All things are hush'd as Nature's self lay dead,  
The mountains seem to nod their drowsy head ;  
The little birds in dreams their songs repeat,  
And sleeping flow'rs beneath the night dews sweat.  
Even lust and envy sleep !*

These lines, though so well known, I have transcribed, that the contrast between them and this passage of Shakspeare may be more accurately observed.

Night is described by two great poets, but one describes a night of quiet, the other of perturbation. In the night of Dryden, all the disturbers of the world are laid asleep ; in that of Shakspeare, nothing but sorcery, lust, and murder, is awake. He that reads Dryden, finds himself lull'd with serenity, and disposed to solitude and contemplation. He that peruses Shakspeare, looks round alarmed, and starts to find himself alone. One is the night of a lover, the other, of a murderer.

JOHNSON.

Line 160. ——— *gild the faces of the grooms withal,*

*For it must seem their guilt.]* Could Shakspeare possibly mean to play upon the similitude of *gild* and *guilt* ?

JOHNSON.

Line 292. *What, in our house?*] This is very fine. Had she been innocent, nothing but the murder itself, and not any of its aggravated circumstances, would naturally have affected her.

WARBURTON.

Line 322. ——— *Here lay Duncan,*

*His silver skin lac'd with his golden blood ;]* It is not improbable, that Shakspeare put these forc'd and unnatural metaphors into the mouth of Macbeth as a mark of artifice and dissimulation, to shew the difference between the studied language of hypocrisy, and the natural outcries of sudden passion. This whole speech, so considered, is a

## ACT IV.

Line 30. *Nose of Turk, and Tartar's lips;*] These ingredients in all probability owed their introduction to the detestation in which the Saracens were held, on account of the *holy wars*.

STEEVENS.

Line 34. *Add thereto a tiger's chaudron,*] *Chaudron*, i. e. *entrails*.

STEEVENS.

Line 83. *An apparition of an armed head rises.*] The armed head represents symbolically Macbeth's head cut off and brought to Malcolm by Macduff. The bloody child is Macduff untimely ripp'd from his mother's womb. The child with a crown on his head, and a bough in his hand, is the royal Malcolm, who ordered his soldiers to hew them down a bough, and bear it before them to Dunsinane. This observation I have adopted from Mr. Upton.

STEEVENS.

Line 108. ——— *the round*

*And top of sovereignty?*] This *round* is that part of the crown that encircles the head. The *top* is the ornament that rises above it.

JOHNSON.

Line 134. ——— *eight kings*——] It is reported that Voltaire often laughs at the tragedy of *Macbeth*, for having a legion of ghosts in it. One should imagine he either had not learned English, or had forgot his Latin; for the spirits of Banquo's line are no more ghosts, than the representations of the Julian race in the *Æneid*; and there is no ghost but Banquo's throughout the play. *Essay on the Genius and Writings of Shakspeare*.

MR. MONTAGUE.

Line 146. *That two-fold balls and treble sceptres carry:*] This was intended as a compliment to king James the first, who first united the two islands and the three kingdoms

under one head ; whose house too was said to be descended from Banquo. WARBURTON.

Line 225. *Sirrah, your father's dead;*] *Sirrah* was not formerly used as a term of reproach, as at present.

Line 299. *Bestride our downfal'n birthdom:*] The allusion is to a man from whom something valuable is about to be taken by violence, and who, that he may defend it without incumbrance, lays it on the ground, and stands over it with his weapon in his hand. Our *birthdom*, or *birth right*, says he, lies on the ground ; let us, like men who are to fight for what is dearest to them, not abandon it, but stand over it and defend it. This is a strong picture of obstinate resolution. JOHNSON.

Line 322. *Though all things foul, &c.*] The meaning perhaps is this :—*My suspicions cannot injure you, if you be virtuous, by supposing that a traitor may put on your virtuous appearance. I do not say that your virtuous appearance proves you a traitor ; for virtue must wear its proper form, though that form be often counterfeited by villany.* JOHNSON.

Line 531. ——— *fee-grief;*] A peculiar sorrow ; a grief that hath a single owner. The expression is, at least to our ears, very harsh. JOHNSON.

Line 545. *Were, on the quarry of these murdered deer,*] *Quarry* is a term used both in *hunting* and *falconry*. In either of these diversions it means the *death of the game*. STEEVENS.

Line 560. *He has no children.*] It has been observed by an anonymous critick, that this is not said of Macbeth, who had children, but of Malcolm, who having none, supposes a father can be so easily comforted. JOHNSON.

Line 564. *At one fell swoop?*] *Swoop* is the fall of a bird of prey upon his quarry.

Line 565. *Dispute it like a man.*] i. e. contend with your present sorrow like a man. STEEVENS.

## ACT V.

Line 90. *Excite the mortified man.*] By the *mortified man*, is meant a *religious*; one who has subdued his passions, is dead to the world, has abandoned it, and all the affairs of it: an *Ascetic*.  
WARBURTON.

Line 134. ——— *English epicures:*] The reproach of Epicurism, on which Mr. Theobald has bestowed a note, is nothing more than a natural invective uttered by an inhabitant of a barren country, against those who have more opportunities of luxury.  
JOHNSON.

Line 144. ——— *those linen cheeks of thine*  
*Are counsellors to fear.*] The meaning is, they infect others who see them with cowardice.  
WARBURTON.

Line 181. *Cleanse the stuff'd bosom of that perilous stuff,*] Is the reading of the old copy; but for the sake of the ear, which must be shocked by the recurrence of so harsh a word, I would be willing to read, *soul*, were there any authority for the change.  
STEEVENS.

Line 189. ——— *cast*  
*The water of my land,*] *To cast the water* was the phrase in use for finding out disorders by the inspection of urine.  
STEEVENS.

Line 227. *What we shall say we have, and what we owe.*] When we are governed by legal kings we shall know the limits of their claim, and shall know what we have of our own, and what they have a right to take from us.  
STEEVENS.

Line 247. *She should have died hereafter;*  
*There would have been a time for such a word, &c.*] I read, — *There would have been a time for — such a world!* — It is a broken speech, in which only part of the thought

is expressed, and may be paraphrased thus: *The queen is dead. Macbeth. Her death should have been deferred to some more peaceful hour; had she lived longer, there would at length have been a time for the honours due to her as a queen, and that respect which I owe her for her fidelity and love. Such is the world—such is the condition of human life, that we always think to-morrow will be happier than to-day, but to-morrow and to-morrow steals over us unenjoyed and unregarded, and we still linger in the same expectation to the moment appointed for our end. All these days, which have thus passed away, have sent multitudes of souls to the grave, who were engrossed by the same dream of future felicity, and, when life was departing from them, were, like me, reckoning on to-morrow.*

Such was once my conjecture, but I am now less confident. Macbeth might mean, that there would have been a more convenient time for such a word, for such intelligence, and so fall into the following reflection. We say we send word when we give intelligence. JOHNSON.

Line 251. *To the last syllable of recorded time;*] *Recorded time* seems to signify the time fixed in the decrees of Heaven for the period of life. The *record of futurity* is indeed no accurate expression; but as we only know transactions past or present, the language of men affords no term for the volumes of prescience, in which future events may be supposed to be written. JOHNSON

Line 253. *The way to dusty death.*] Dr. Warburton reads *dusky*.

*Dusty* is a very natural epithet.

JOHNSON.

*The dust of death* is an expression used in the 22d Psalm.

STEVENS.

Line 354. *I bear a charmed life,*] In the days of chivalry, the champions' arms being ceremoniously blessed, each took an oath, that he used no *charmed* weapons. Macbeth, according to the law of arms, or perhaps only in allusion to

this custom, tells Macduff of the security he had in the prediction of the spirit.

STEEVENS.

Line 263. — palter with us in a double sense;] That struggle with ambiguous expressions.

JOHNSON

Line 298. *Had I as many sons as I have hairs,*

*I would not wish them to a fairer death:*

*And so his knell is knoll'd.]* This incident is

thus related from Henry of Huntingdon by Camden, in his *Remains*, from which our author probably copied it.

When Seyward, the martial earl of Northumberland, understood that his son, whom he had sent in service against the Scotchmen, was slain, he demanded whether his wounds were in the fore part or hinder part of his body. When it was answered, in the fore part, he replied, "I am right glad; neither wish I any other death to me or mine."

JOHNSON.







Thurston del.

Rhodes sculp.

## KING OF NOBILITY.

THE WALL IS HIGH: AND YET WILL I LEAP DOWN:  
GOOD GROUND, BE PITIFUL AND HURT ME NOT!

Act 4. Scene 3.

London: Published by Thomas Tegg, No 111, Cheapside, July 1<sup>st</sup> 1853.

Printed by Duxon

Prout



# KING JOHN.

3 VOL. V.

0

**KING JOHN.]** *The troublesome Reign of King John* was written in two parts, by W. Shakespeare and W. Rowley, and printed 1611. But the present play is entirely different, and infinitely superior to it. POPE.

The edition of 1611 has no mention of Rowley, nor in the account of Rowley's works is any mention made of his conjunction with Shakespeare in any play. *King John* was reprinted, in two parts, in 1622. The first edition that I have found of this play, in its present form, is that of 1623, in folio. The edition of 1591 I have not seen. JOHNSON.

Dr. Johnson mistakes, when he says there is no mention, in Rowley's works, of any conjunction with Shakespeare. *The Birth of Merlin* is ascribed to them jointly, though I cannot believe Shakespeare had any thing to do with it. Mr. Capell is equally mistaken, when he says (Pref. p. 15) that Rowley is called his partner in the title-page of *The Merry Devil of Edmonton*.

There must have been some tradition, however erroneous, upon which Mr. Pope's account was founded. I make no doubt that Rowley wrote the first *King John*; and, when Shakespeare's play was called for, and could not be procured from the players, a piratical bookseller reprinted the old one, with *W. Sh.* in the title-page. FARMER.

The elder play of *King John* was first published in 1591. Shakespeare has preserved the greatest part of the conduct of it, as well as some of the lines. A few of those I have pointed out, and others I have omitted as undeserving notice. The number of quotations from Horace, and similar scraps of learning scattered over this motley piece, ascertain it to have been the work of a scholar. It contains likewise a quantity of rhyming Latin, and ballad-metre; and in a scene where the Bastard is represented as plundering a monastery, there are strokes of humour, which seem, from their particular turn, to have been most evidently produced by another hand than that of our author.

Of this historical drama there is a subsequent edition in 1611, printed for John Helme, whose name appears before none of the genuine pieces of Shakespeare. I admitted this play some years ago as our author's own, among the twenty which I published from the old editions; but a more careful perusal of it, and a further conviction of his custom of

borrowing plots, sentiments, &c. disposes me to recede from that opinion. STEEVENS.

A play entitled *The troublesome Raigne of John King of England*, in two parts, was printed in 1591, without the writer's name. It was written, I believe, either by Robert Greene, or George Peele; and certainly preceded this of our author. Mr. Pope, who is very inaccurate in matters of this kind, says that the former was printed in 1611, as written by W. Shakespeare and W. Rowley. But this is not true. In the second edition of this old play, in 1611, the letters *W. Sh.* were put into the title-page to deceive the purchaser, and to lead him to suppose the piece was Shakespeare's play, which, at that time, was not published.—See a more minute account of this fraud in *An Attempt to ascertain the Order of Shakespeare's Plays*, Vol. II. Our author's *King John* was written, I imagine, in 1596. The reasons on which this opinion is founded may be found in that Essay. MALONE.

Though this play have the title of *The Life and Death of King John*, yet the action of it begins at the thirty-fourth year of his life, and takes in only some transactions of his reign to the time of his demise, being an interval of about seventeen years. THEOBALD.

Hall, Holinshed, Stowe, &c. are closely followed, not only in the conduct, but sometimes in the very expressions, throughout the following historical dramas; viz. *Macbeth*, this play, *Richard II.* *Henry IV.* two parts, *Henry V.* *Henry VI.* three parts, *Richard III.* and *Henry VIII.*

"A booke called *The Historie of Lord Faulconbridge, bastard Son to Richard Cordelion*," was entered at Stationers' Hall, Nov. 29, 1614; but I have never met with it, and therefore know not whether it was the old black letter history, or a play upon the same subject. For the original *King John*, see *Six old Plays on which Shakespeare founded*, &c. published by S. Leacroft, Charing-cross. STEEVENS.

*The Historie of Lord Faulconbridge, &c.* is a prose narrative, in bl. l. The earliest edition that I have seen of it was printed in 1616.

A book entitled *Richard Cur de Lion* was entered on the Stationers' Books in 1558.

A play called *The Funeral of Richard Cordelion*, was

written by Robert Wilson, Henry Chettle, Anthony Mundy,  
and Michael Drayton, and first exhibited in the year 1598.  
See *The Historical Account of the English Stage*, Vol. II.

MALONE.

---

---

**PERSONS REPRESENTED.**

---

**KING JOHN:**

*Prince HENRY, his son; afterwards King Henry III.*

*ARTHUR, duke of Bretagne, son of Geoffrey, late duke of  
Bretagne, the elder brother of King John.*

*WILLIAM MARESHALL, earl of Pembroke.*

*GEFFREY FITZ-PETER, earl of Essex, chief justiciary of  
England.*

*WILLIAM LONGSWORD, earl of Salisbury.*

*ROBERT BIGOT, earl of Norfolk.*

*HUBERT DE BURGH, chamberlain to the king.*

*ROBERT FAULCONBRIDGE, son of sir Robert Faulconbridge:*

*PHILIP FAULCONBRIDGE, his half-brother, bastard son to  
King Richard the First.*

*JAMES GURNEY, servant to Lady Faulconbridge.*

*PETER of POMFRET, a prophet.*

*PHILIP, king of France.*

*LEWIS, the dauphin.*

*Arch-duke of AUSTRIA.*

*Cardinal PANDULPH, the Pope's legate.*

*MELUN, a French lord.*

*CHATILLON, ambassador from France to King John.*

*ELINOR, the widow of King Henry II. and mother of King  
John.*

*CONSTANCE, mother to Arthur.*

*BLANCH, daughter to Alphonso, king of Castile, and niece  
to King John.*

*Lady FAULCONBRIDGE, mother to the Bastard, and Robert  
Faulconbridge.*

*Lords, Ladies, Citizens of Angiers, Sheriff, Heralds, Officers,  
Soldiers, Messengers, and other Attendants.*

*SCENE, sometimes in England, and sometimes in France.*

# KING JOHN.

---

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—Northampton. *A room of state in the palace.*

*Enter King JOHN, Queen ELINOR, PEMBROKE, ESSEX, SALISBURY, and others, with CHATILLON.*

*K. John.* Now, say, Chatillon, what would France with us?

*[Chat. Thus, after greeting, speaks the king of France,*

*In my behaviour, to the majesty,  
The borrow'd majesty of England here.*

*Eli.* A strange beginning;—borrow'd majesty!

*K. John.* Silence, good mother; hear the embassy.

*Chat.* Philip of France, in right and true behalf,  
Of thy deceased brother Geoffrey's son,  
Arthur Plantagenet, lays most lawful claim  
To this fair island, and the territories;  
To Ireland, Poitiers, Anjou, Touraine, Maine:  
Desiring thee to lay aside the sword,  
Which sways usurpingly these several titles;  
And put the same into young Arthur's hand,  
Thy nephew, and right royal sovereign.

*K. John.* What follows, if we disallow of this ?

*Chat.* The proud control of fierce and bloody war,  
To enforce these rights so forcibly withheld.

*K. John.* Here have we war for war, and blood for  
blood,

Controlment for controlment : so answer France.

*Chat.* Then take my king's defiance from my mouth,  
The furthest limit of my embassy'.

*K. John.* Bear mine to him, and so depart in  
peace:

Be thou as lightning in the eyes of France ;  
For ere thou canst report I will be there,  
The thunder of my cannon shall be heard :  
So, hence ! Be thou the trumpet of our wrath,  
And sullen presage of your own decay.—  
An honourable conduct let him have :—  
Pembroke, look to't : Farewell, Chatillon.

[*Exeunt* CHATILLON and PEMBROKE.]

*Eli.* What now, my son ? have I not ever said,  
How that ambitious Constance would not cease,  
Till she had kindled France, and all the world,  
Upon the right and party of her son ?  
This might have been prevented, and made whole,  
With very easy arguments of love ;  
Which now the manage of two kingdoms must  
With fearful bloody issue arbitrate.

*K. John.* Our strong possession, and our right, for  
us.

*Eli.* Your strong possession, much more than your  
right ;  
Or else it must go wrong with you, and me :  
So much my conscience whispers in your ear ;  
Which none but heaven, and you, and I, shall hear.



*Enter the Sheriff of Northamptonshire, who whispers*  
ESSEX.

*Essex.* My liege, here is the strangest controversy,  
Come from the country to be judg'd by you,  
That e'er I heard: Shall I produce the men?

*K. John.* Let them approach.— [Exit Sheriff.  
Our abbies, and our priories, shall pay

*Re-enter Sheriff, with ROBERT FAULCONBRIDGE, and*  
PHILIP, his bastard brother.

This expedition's charge.—What men are you?

*Bast.* Your faithful subject I, a gentleman,  
Born in Northamptonshire; and eldest son,  
As I suppose, to Robert Faulconbridge;  
A soldier, by the honour-giving hand  
Of Cœur-de-lion knighted in the field.

*K. John.* What art thou?

*Rob.* The son and heir to that same Faulconbridge.

*K. John.* Is that the elder, and art thou the heir?  
You came not of one mother then, it seems.

*Bast.* Most certain of one mother, mighty king,  
That is well known; and, as I think, one father:  
But, for the certain knowledge of that truth,  
I put you o'er to heaven, and to my mother;  
Of that I doubt, as all men's children may.

*Eli.* Out on thee, rude man! thou dost shame thy  
mother,

And wound her honour with this diffidence.

*Bast.* I, madam? no, I have no reason for it;  
That is my brother's plea, and none of mine;  
The which if he can prove, 'a pops me out  
At least from fair five hundred pound a year:  
Heaven guard my mother's honour, and my land!

*K. John.* A good blunt fellow:—Why, being younger born,

Doth he lay claim to thine inheritance?

*Bast.* I know not why, except to get the land.

But once he slander'd me with bastardy:

But whe'r I be as true begot, or no,

That still I lay upon my mother's head;

But, that I am as well begot, my liege,

(Fair fall the bones that took the pains for me!)

Compare our faces, and be judge yourself.

If old sir Robert did beget us both,

And were our father, and this son like him;—

O old sir Robert, father, on my knee

I give heaven thanks, I was not like to thee.

*K. John.* Why, what a madcap hath heaven lent us here!

*Eli.* He hath a trick of Cœur-de-lion's face,

The accent of his tongue affecteth him:

Do you not read some tokens of my son

In the large composition of this man?

*K. John.* Mine eye hath well examined his parts,

And finds them perfect Richard.—Sirrah, speak,

What doth move you to claim your brother's land?

*Bast.* Because he hath a half-face, like my father;

With that half-face would he have all my land:

A half-fac'd groat five hundred pound a year!

*Rob.* My gracious liege, when that my father liv'd,

Your brother did employ my father much;—

*Bast.* Well, sir, by this you cannot get my land;

Your tale must be, how he employ'd my mother.

*Rob.* And once despatch'd him in an embassy

To Germany, there, with the emperor,

To treat of high affairs touching that time:

Th' advantage of his absence took the king,  
And in the mean time sojourn'd at my father's;  
Where how he did prevail, I shame to speak:  
But truth is truth; large lengths of seas and shores  
Between my father and my mother lay,  
(As I have heard my father speak himself,)  
When this same lusty gentleman was got.  
Upon his death-bed he by will bequeath'd  
His lands to me; and took it, on his death,  
That this, my mother's son, was none of his;  
And, if he were, he came into the world  
Full fourteen weeks before the course of time.  
Then, good my liege, let me have what is mine,  
My father's land, as was my father's will.

*K. John.* Sirrah, your brother is legitimate;  
Your father's wife did after wedlock bear him;  
And, if she did play false, the fault was hers;  
Which fault lies on the hazards of all husbands  
That marry wives. Tell me, how if my brother,  
Who, as you say, took pains to get this son,  
Had of your father claim'd this son for his?  
In sooth, good friend, your father might have kept  
This calf, bred from his cow, from all the world;  
In sooth, he might: then, if he were my brother's,  
My brother might not claim him; nor your father,  
Being none of his, refuse him: This concludes,—  
My mother's son did get your father's heir;  
Your father's heir must have your father's land.

*Rob.* Shall then my father's will be of no force,  
To dispossess that child which is not his?

*Bast.* Of no more force to dispossess me, sir,  
Than was his will to get me, as I think.

*Eli.* Whether hadst thou rather,—be a Faulconbridge,

And like thy brother, to enjoy thy land;  
Or the reputed son of Cœur-de-lion,  
Lord of thy presence, and no land beside?

*Bast.* Madam, an if my brother had my shape,  
And I had his, sir Robert his, like him;  
And if my legs were two such riding rods,  
My arms such eel-skins stuff'd; my face so thin,  
That in mine ear I durst not stick a rose,  
Lest men should say, Look, where three farthings  
goes!

And, to his shape, were heir to all this land,  
'Would I might never stir from off this place,  
I'd give it every foot to have this face;  
I would not be sir Nob in any case.

*Eli.* I like thee well; Wilt thou forsake thy fortune,  
Bequeath thy land to him, and follow me?  
I am a soldier, and now bound to France.

*Bast.* Brother, take you my land, I'll take my  
chance:

Your face hath got five hundred pounds a year;  
Yet sell your face for five pence, and 'tis dear.—  
Madam, I'll follow you unto the death.

*Eli.* Nay, I would have you go before me thither.

*Bast.* Our country manners give our betters way.

*K. John.* What is thy name?

*Bast.* Philip, my liege; so is my name begun;  
Philip, good old sir Robert's wife's eldest son.

*K. John.* From henceforth bear his name whose form  
thou bear'st:

Kneel thou down Philip, but arise more great;  
Arise sir Richard, and Plantagenet.

*Bast.* Brother, by the mother's side, give me your  
hand;

My father gave me honour, yours gave land:—  
 Now blessed be the hour, by night or day,  
 When I was got, sir Robert was away.

*Eli.* The very spirit of Plantagenet!—  
 I am thy grandame, Richard; call me so.

*Bast.* Madam, by chance, but not by truth: What  
 though?

Something about, a little from the right,  
 In at the window, or else o'er the hatch:  
 Who dares not stir by day, must walk by night;  
 And have is have, however men do catch:  
 Near or far off, well won is still well shot;  
 And I am I, howe'er I was begot.

*K. John.* Go, Faulconbridge; now hast thou thy desire,  
 A landless knight makes thee a landed squire.—  
 Come, madam, and come, Richard; we must speed  
 For France, for France; for it is more than need.

*Bast.* Brother, adieu; Good fortune come to thee!  
 For thou wast got i' th' way of honesty.

[*Exeunt all but the Bastard.*]

A foot of honour better than I was;  
 But many a many foot of land the worse.  
 Well, now can I make any Joan a lady:—  
*Good den, sir Richard,—God-a-mercy, fellow;—*  
 And if his name be George, I'll call him Peter:  
 For new-made honour doth forget men's names;  
 'Tis too respective, and too sociable,  
 For your conversion. Now our traveller,—  
 He and his tooth-pick at my worship's mess;  
 And when my knightly stomach is suffic'd,  
 Why then I suck my teeth, and catechise  
 My picked man of countries:—*My dear sir,*  
 (Thus, leaning on mine elbow, I begin,)

*I shall beseech you*—That is question now;  
 And then comes answer like an ABC-book:—  
*O sir, says answer, at your best command;*  
*At your employment; at your service, sir:—*  
*No, sir, says question, I, sweet sir, at yours:*  
 And so, ere answer knows what question would,  
 (Saving in dialogue of compliment;  
 And talking of the Alps, and Apennines,  
 The Pyrenean, and the river Po.)  
 It draws toward supper in conclusion so.  
 But this is worshipful spirit,  
 And fits the mounting spirit, like myself:  
 For he is but a bastard to the time,  
 That doth not smack of observation;  
 (And so am I, whether I smack, or no;)   
 And not alone in habit and device,  
 Exterior form, outward accoutrement;  
 But from the inward motion to deliver  
 Sweet, sweet, sweet poison for the age's tooth:  
 Which, though I will not practise to deceive,  
 Yet, to avoid deceit, I mean to learn;  
 For it shall strew the footsteps of my rising.—  
 But who comes in such haste, in riding robes?  
 What woman-post is this? hath she no husband,  
 That will take pains to blow a horn before her?

*Enter Lady FAULCONBRIDGE and JAMES GURNEY.*

O me! it is my mother:—How now, good lady?  
 What brings you here to court so hastily?

*Lady F.* Where is that slave, thy brother? where  
 is he?

That holds in chase mine honour up and down?

*Bast.* My brother Robert? old sir Robert's son?

Colbrand the giant, that same mighty man?  
Is it sir Robert's son, that you seek so?

*Lady F.* Sir Robert's son! Ay, thou unreverend boy,  
Sir Robert's son: Why scorn'st thou at sir Robert?  
He is sir Robert's son; and so art thou.

*Bast.* James Gurney, wilt thou give us leave a while?

*Gur.* Good leave, good Philip.

*Bast.* Philip?—sparrow!—James,  
There's toys abroad; anon I'll tell thee more.

[*Exit GURNEY.*]

Madam, I was not old sir Robert's son;  
Sir Robert might have eat his part in me  
Upon Good-friday, and ne'er broke his fast:  
Sir Robert could do well; Marry, (to confess!)  
Could he get me? Sir Robert could not do it;  
We know his handy-work:—Therefore, good mother,  
To whom am I beholden for these limbs?  
Sir Robert never help to make this leg.

*Lady F.* Hast thou conspired with thy brother too,  
That for thine own gain should'st defend mine honour?  
What means this scorn, thou most untoward knave?

*Bast.* Knight, knight, good mother,—Basilisco-like:  
What! I am dubb'd; I have it on my shoulder.  
But, mother, I am not sir Robert's son;  
I have disclaim'd sir Robert, and my land;  
Legitimation, name, and all is gone:

Then, good my mother, let me know my father;  
Some proper man, I hope; Who was it, mother?

*Lady F.* Hast thou denied thyself a Faulconbridge?

*Bast.* As faithfully as I deny the devil.

*Lady F.* King Richard Cœur-de-lion was thy father;  
By long and vehement suit I was seduc'd  
'To make room for him in my husband's bed:—

Heaven lay not my transgression to my charge!—  
Thou art the issue of my dear offence,  
Which was so strongly urg'd, past my defence.

*Bast.* Now, by this light, were I to get again,  
Madam, I would not wish a better father.  
Some sins do bear their privilege on earth,  
And so doth yours; your fault was not your folly:  
Needs must you lay your heart at his dispose,—  
Subjected tribute to commanding love,—  
Against whose fury and unmatched force  
The awless lion could not wage the fight,  
Nor keep his princely heart from Richard's hand.  
He, that perforce robs lions of their hearts,  
May easily win a woman's. Ay, my mother,  
With all my heart I thank thee for my father!  
Who lives and dares but say, thou didst not well  
When I was got, I'll send his soul to hell.  
Come, lady, I will show thee to my kin;  
And they shall say, when Richard me begot,  
If thou hadst said him nay, it had been sin:  
Who says it was, he lies; I say, 'twas not. [Exeunt.



## ACT II.

SCENE I.—France. *Before the walls of Angiers.*

*Enter, on one side, the Archduke of Austria, and forces; on the other, PHILIP, king of France, and forces; LEWIS, CONSTANCE, ARTHUR, and Attendants.*

*Lew.* Before Angiers well met, brave Austria.—  
Arthur, that great fore-runner of thy blood,  
Richard, that robb'd the lion of his heart,  
And fought the holy wars in Palestine,  
By this brave duke came early to his grave:  
And, for amends to his posterity,  
At our importance hither is he come,  
To spread his colours, boy, in thy behalf;  
And to rebuke the usurpation  
Of thy unnatural uncle, English John:  
Embrace him, love him, give him welcome hither.

*Arth.* God shall forgive you Cœur-de-lion's death,  
The rather, that you give his offspring life,  
Shadowing their right under your wings of war:  
I give you welcome with a powerless hand,  
But with a heart full of unstained love:  
Welcome before the gates of Angiers, duke.

*Lew.* A noble boy! Who would not do thee right?

*Aust.* Upon thy cheek lay I this zealous kiss,  
As seal to this indenture of my love;  
That to my home I will no more return,  
Till Angiers, and the right thou hast in France,  
Together with that pale, that white fac'd shore,  
Whose foot spurns back the ocean's roaring tides,

And coops from other lands her islanders,  
 Even till that England, hedg'd in with the main,  
 That water-walled bulwark, still secure  
 And confident from foreign purposes,  
 Even till that utmost corner of the west  
 Salute thee for her'king: till then, fair boy,  
 Will I not think of home, but follow arms.

*Const.* O, take his mother's thanks, a widow's thanks,  
 Till your strong hand shall help to give him strength,  
 To make a more requital to your love.

*Aust.* The peace of heaven is theirs, that lift their  
 swords

In such a just and charitable war.

*K. Phi.* Well then, to work; our cannon shall be bent  
 Against the brows of this resisting town.—  
 Call for our chiefest men of discipline,  
 To cull the plots of best advantages:—  
 We'll lay before this town our royal bones,  
 Wade to the market-place in Frenchmen's blood,  
 But we will make it subject to this boy.

*Const.* Stay for an answer to your embassy,  
 Lest unadvis'd you stain your swords with blood:  
 My lord Chatillon may from England bring  
 That right in peace, which here we urge in war;  
 And then we shall repent each drop of blood,  
 That hot rash haste so indirectly shed.

*Enter CHATILLON.*

*K. Phi.* A wonder, lady!—lo, upon thy wish,  
 Our messenger Chatillon is arriv'd.—  
 What England says, say briefly, gentle lord,  
 We coldly pause for thee; Chatillon, speak.

*Chat.* Then turn your forces from this paltry siege,

And stir them up against a mightier task.  
 England, impatient of your just demands,  
 Hath put himself in arms; the adverse winds,  
 Whose leisure I have staid, have given him time  
 To land his legions all as soon as I:  
 His marches are expedient to this town,  
 His forces strong, his soldiers confident.  
 With him along is come the mother-queen,  
 An Até, stirring him to blood and strife;  
 With her her niece, the lady Blanch of Spain,  
 With them a bastard of the king deceas'd:  
 And all th' unsettled humours of the land,—  
 Rash, inconsiderate, fiery voluntaries,  
 With ladies' faces, and fierce dragons' spleens,—  
 Have sold their fortunes at their native homes,  
 Bearing their birthrights proudly on their backs,  
 To make a hazard of new fortunes here.  
 In brief, a braver choice of dauntless spirits,  
 Than now the English bottoms have waft o'er,  
 Did never float upon the swelling tide,  
 To do offence and scath in Christendom.  
 The interruption of their churlish drums [*Drums beat*]  
 Cuts off more circumstance: they are at hand,  
 To parley, or to fight; therefore, prepare.

*K. Phi.* How much unlook'd for ~~is~~ this expedition!

*Aust.* By how much unexpected, by so much

We must awake endeavour for defence;

For courage mounteth with occasion:

Let them be welcome then, we are prepar'd.

*Enter King JOHN, ELINOR, BLANCH, the Bastard,  
 PEMBROKE, and forces.*

*K. John.* Peace be to France; if France in peace permit

Our just and lineal entrance to our own!  
 If not; bleed France, and peace ascend to heaven!  
 Whiles we, God's wrathful agent, do correct  
 Their proud contempt that beat his peace to heaven.

*K. Phi.* Peace be to England; if that war return  
 From France to England, there to live in peace!  
 England we love; and, for that England's sake,  
 With burden of our armour here we sweat:  
 This toil of ours should be a work of thine;  
 But thou from loving England art so far,  
 That thou hast under-wrought his lawful king,  
 Cut off the sequence of posterity,  
 Outfaced infant state, and done a rape  
 Upon the maiden virtue of the crown.  
 Look here upon thy brother Geoffrey's face;—  
 These eyes, these brows, were moulded out of his:  
 This little abstract doth contain that large,  
 Which died in Geoffrey; and the hand of time  
 Shall draw this brief into as huge a volume.  
 That Geoffrey was thy elder brother born,  
 And this his son; England was Geoffrey's right,  
 And this is Geoffrey's: In the name of God,  
 How comes it then, that thou art call'd a king,  
 When living blood doth in these temples beat,  
 Which owe the crown that thou o'ermasterest?

*K. John.* From whom hast thou this great com-  
 mission, France,  
 To draw my answer from thy articles?

*K. Phi.* From that supernal judge, that stirs good  
 thoughts  
 In any breast of strong authority,  
 To look into the blots and stains of right.  
 That judge hath made me guardian to this boy:

Under whose warrant, I impeach thy wrong;  
And, by whose help, I mean to chastise it.

*K. John.* Alack, thou dost usurp authority.

*K. Phi.* Excuse; it is to beat usurping down.

*Eli.* Who is it, thou dost call usurper, France?

*Const.* Let me make answer;—thy usurping son.

*Eli.* Out, insolent! thy bastard shall be king;  
That thou may'st be a queen, and check the world!

*Const.* My bed was ever to thy son as true,  
As thine was to thy husband: and this boy  
Liker in feature to his father Geoffrey,  
Than thou and John in manners; being as like,  
As rain to water, or devil to his dam.

My boy a bastard! By my soul, I think,  
His father never was so true begot;  
It cannot be, an if thou wert his mother.

*Eli.* There's a good mother, boy, that blots thy  
father.

*Const.* There's a good grandam, boy, that would  
blot thee.

*Aust.* Peace!

*Bast.* Hear the crier.

*Aust.* What the devil art thou?

*Bast.* One that will play the devil, sir, with you,  
An 'a may catch your hide and you none.  
You are the hare of whom the proverb goes,  
Whose valour plucks dead lions by the beard;  
I'll smoke your skin-coat, an I catch you right;  
Sirrah, look to't; i'faith, I will, i'faith.

*Blanch.* O, well did he become that lion's robe,  
That did disrobe the lion of that robe!

*Bast.* It lies as sightly on the back of him,  
As great Alcides' shoes upon an ass:—

But, ass, I'll take that burden from your back;  
Or lay on that, shall make your shoulders crack.

*Aust.* What cracker is this same, that deafs our ears  
With this abundance of superfluous breath?

*K. Phi.* Lewis, determine what we shall do straight.

*Lew.* Women and fools, break off your conference.—  
King John, this is the very sum of all,—  
England, and Ireland, Anjou, Touraine, Maine,  
In right of Arthur do I claim of thee:

Wilt thou resign them, and lay down thy arms?

*K. John.* My life as soon:—I do defy thee, France.  
Arthur of Bretagne, yield thee to my hand;  
And, out of my dear love, I'll give thee more  
Than e'er the coward hand of France can win:  
Submit thee, boy.

*Eli.* Come to thy grandam, child.

*Const.* Do, child, go to it' grandam, child;  
Give grandam kingdom, and it' grandam will  
Give it a plum, a cherry, and a fig:  
There's a good grandam.

*Arth.* Good my mother, peace!  
I would, that I were low laid in my grave;  
I am not worth this coil that's made for me.

*Eli.* His mother shames him so, poor boy, he weeps.

*Const.* Now shame upon you, whe'r she does, or  
no!

His grandam's wrongs, and not his mother's shames,  
Draw those heaven-moving pearls from his poor eyes,  
Which heaven shall take in nature of a fee;  
Ay, with these crystal beads heaven shall be-brib'd  
To do him justice, and revenge on you.

*Eli.* Thou monstrous slanderer of heaven and earth!

*Const.* Thou monstrous injurer of heaven and earth!

Call not me slanderer; thou, and thine, usurp  
 The dominations, royalties, and rights,  
 Of this oppressed boy: This is thy eldest son's son,  
 Infortunate in nothing but in thee;  
 Thy sins are visited in this poor child;  
 The canon of the law is laid on him,  
 Being but the second generation  
 Removed from thy sin-conceiving womb.

*K. John.* Bedlam, have done.

*Const.* I have but this to say,—  
 That he's not only plagued for her sin,  
 But God hath made her sin and her the plague  
 On this removed issue, plagu'd for her,  
 And with her plague, her sin; his injury  
 Her injury,— the beadle to her sin;  
 All punish'd in the person of this child,  
 And all for her; A plague upon her!

*Eli.* Thou unadvised scold, I can produce  
 A will, that bars the title of thy son.

*Const.* Ay, who doubts that? a will! a wicked will;  
 A woman's will; a canker'd grandam's will!

*K. Phi.* Peace, lady; pause, or be more temperate:  
 It ill beseems this presence, to cry aim  
 To these ill-tuned repetitions.—

Some trumpet summon hither to the walls  
 These men of Angiers; let us hear them speak,  
 Whose title they admit, Arthur's or John's.

*Trumpets sound. Enter Citizens upon the walls.*

*1 Cit.* Who is it, that hath warn'd us to the walls?

*K. Phi.* 'Tis France, for England.

*K. John.* England, for itself:  
 You men of Angiers, and my loving subjects,—

*K. Phi.* You loving men of Angiers, Arthur's subjects,  
Our trumpet call'd you to this gentle parle.

*K. John.* For our advantage;—Therefore, hear us  
first.—

These flags of France, that are advanced here  
Before the eye and prospect of your town,  
Have hither march'd to your endamagement:  
The cannons have their bowels full of wrath;  
And ready mounted are they, to spit forth  
Their iron indignation 'gainst your walls:  
All preparation for a bloody siege,  
And merciless proceeding by these French,  
Confront your city's eyes, your winking gates;  
And, but for our approach, those sleeping stones,  
That as a waist do girdle you about,  
By the compulsion of their ordnance  
By this time from their fixed beds of lime  
Had been dishabited, and wide havock made  
For bloody power to rush upon your peace. 4  
But, on the sight of us, your lawful king,——  
Who painfully, with much expedient march,  
Have brought a countercheck before your gates,  
To save unscratch'd your city's threaten'd cheeks,—  
Behold, the French, amaz'd, vouchsafe a parle:  
And now, instead of bullets wrapp'd in fire,  
To make a shaking fever in your walls,  
They shoot but calm words, folded up in smoke,  
To make a faithless error in your ears:  
Which trust accordingly, kind citizens,  
And let us in, your king; whose labour'd spirits,  
Forewearied in this action of swift speed,  
Crave harbourage within your city walls.

*K. Phi.* When I have said, make answer to us both.



Lo, in this right hand, whose protection  
Is most divinely vow'd upon the right  
Of him it holds, stands young Plantagenet;  
Son to the elder brother of this man,  
And king o'er him, and all that he enjoys:  
For this down-trodden equity, we tread  
In warlike march these greens before your town;  
Being no further enemy to you,  
Than the constraint of hospitable zeal,  
In the relief of this oppressed child,  
Religiously provokes. Be pleased then  
To pay that duty, which you truly owe,  
To him that owes it; namely, this young prince:  
And then our arms, like to a muzzled bear,  
Save in aspect, have all offence seal'd up;  
Our cannons' malice vainly shall be spent  
Against th' invulnerable clouds of heaven;  
And, with a blessed and unvex'd retire,  
With unhack'd swords, and helmets all unbruis'd,  
We will bear home that lusty blood again,  
Which here we came to spout against your town,  
And leave your children, wives, and you, in peace.  
But if you fondly pass our proffer'd offer,  
'Tis not the roundure of your old-fac'd walls  
Can hide you from our messengers of war;  
Though all these English, and their discipline,  
Were harbour'd in their rude circumference.  
Then, tell us, shall your city call us lord,  
In that behalf which we have challeng'd it?  
Or shall we give the signal to our rage,  
And stalk in blood to our possession?  
1 Cit. In brief, we are the king of England's subjects;  
For him, and in his right, we hold this town.

*K. John.* Acknowledge then the king, and let me in.

*I Cit.* That can we not: but he that proves the king,  
To him will we prove loyal; till that time,  
Have we ramm'd up our gates against the world.

*K. John.* Doth not the crown of England prove the  
king?

And, if not that, I bring you witnesses,  
Twice fifteen thousand hearts of England's breed,—

*Bast.* Bastards, and else.

*K. John.* To verify our title with their lives.

*K. Phi.* As many, and as well-born bloods as  
those,—

*Bast.*, Some bastards too.

*K. Phi.* Stand in his face, to contradict his claim.

*I Cit.* Till you compound whose right is worthiest,  
We, for the worthiest, hold the right from both.

*K. John.* Then God forgive the sin of all those souls,  
That to their everlasting residence,  
Before the dew of evening fall, shall fleet,  
In dreadful trial of our kingdom's king!

*K. Phi.* Amen, Amen!—Mount, chevaliers! to arms!

*Bast.* St. George,—that swing'd the dragon, and e'er  
since,

Sits on his horseback at mine hostess' door,  
Teach us some fence!—Sirrah, were I at home,  
At your den, sirrah, [*To AUSTRIA*] with your lioness,  
I'd set an ox-head to your lion's hide,  
And make a monster of you.

*Aust.* Peace; no more.

*Bast.* O, tremble; for you hear the lion roar.

*K. John.* Up higher to the plain; where we'll set forth,  
In best appointment, all our regiments.

*Bast.* Speed then, to take advantage of the field.

*K. Phi.* It shall be so;—[*To Lewis*] and at the  
other hill  
Command the rest to stand.—God, and our right!  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*The same.*

*Alarums and excursions, then a retreat. Enter a French  
Herald, with trumpets, to the gates.*

*F. Her.* You men of Angiers, open wide your gates,  
And let young Arthur, duke of Bretagne, in;  
Who, by the hand of France, this day hath made  
Much work for tears in many an English mother,  
Whose sons lye scatter'd on the bleeding ground:  
Many a widow's husband groveling lies,  
Coldly embracing the discolour'd earth;  
And victory, with little loss, doth play  
Upon the dancing banners of the French;  
Who are at hand, triumphantly display'd,  
To enter conquerors, and to proclaim  
Arthur of Bretagne, England's king, and yours.

*Enter an English Herald, with trumpets.*

*E. Her.* Rejoice, you men of Angiers, ring your bells;  
King John, your king and England's, doth approach,  
Commander of this hot malicious day!  
Their armours, that march'd hence so silver-bright,  
Hither return all gilt with Frenchmen's blood;  
There stuck no plume in any English crest,  
That is removed by a staff of France;  
Our colours do return in those same hands  
That did display them when we first march'd forth;  
And, like a jolly troop of huntsmen, come

Our lusty English, all with purpled hands,  
 Died in the dying slaughter of their foes:  
 Open your gates, and give the victors way.

*Cit.* Heralds, from off our towers we might behold,  
 From first to last, the onset and retire  
 Of both your armies; whose equality  
 By our best eyes cannot be censured:  
 Blood hath bought blood, and blows have answer'd  
 blows;  
 Strength match'd with strength, and power confronted  
 power:

Both are alike; and both alike we like.  
 One must prove greatest: while they weigh so even,  
 We hold our town for neither; yet for both.

*Enter, at one side, King JOHN, with his power; ELINOR,  
 BLANCH, and the Bastard; at the other, King PHILIP,  
 LEWIS, AUSTRIA, and forces.*

*K. John.* France, hast thou yet more blood to cast  
 away?

Say, shall the current of our right run on?  
 Whose passage, vex'd with thy impediment,  
 Shall leave his native channel, and o'er-swell  
 With course disturb'd even thy confining shores;  
 Unless thou let his silver water keep  
 A peaceful progress to the ocean.

*K. Phi.* England, thou hast not sav'd one drop of  
 blood,

In this hot trial, more than we of France;  
 Rather, lost more: And by this hand I swear,  
 That sways the earth this climate overlooks,—  
 Before we will lay down our just-borne arms,  
 We'll put thee down, 'gainst whom these arms we bear,

Or add a royal number to the dead;  
Gracing the scroll, that tells of this war's loss,  
With slaughter coupled to the name of kings.

*Bast.* Ha, majesty! how high thy glory towers,  
When the rich blood of kings is set on fire!  
O, now doth death line his dead chaps with steel;  
The swords of soldiers are his teeth, his fangs;  
And now he feasts, mousing the flesh of men,  
In undetermin'd differences of kings.—

Why stand these royal fronts amazed thus?  
Cry, havock, kings! back to the stained field,  
You equal potents, fiery-kindled spirits!  
Then let confusion of one part confirm  
The other's peace; till then, blows, blood, and death!

*K. John.* Whose party do the townsmen yet admit?

*K. Phi.* Speak, citizens, for England; who's your  
king?

*1 Cit.* The king of England, when we know the king.

*K. Phi.* Know him in us, that here hold up his right.

*K. John.* In us, that are our own great deputy,  
And bear possession of our person here;  
Lord of our presence, Angiers, and of you.

*1 Cit.* A greater power than we, denies all this;  
And, till it be undoubted, we do lock  
Our former scruple in our strong-barr'd gates:  
King'd of our fears; until our fears, resolv'd,  
Be by some certain king purg'd and depos'd.

*Bast.* By heaven, these scroyles of Angiers flout you,  
kings;  
And stand securely on their battlements,  
As in a theatre, whence they gape and point  
At your industrious scenes and acts of death.  
Your royal presences be rul'd by me;

Do like the mutines of Jerusalem,  
 Be friends a while, and both conjointly bend  
 Your sharpest deeds of malice on this town:  
 By east and west let France and England mount  
 Their battering cannon, charged to the mouths;  
 Till their soul-fearing clamours have brawl'd down  
 The flinty ribs of this contemptuous city:  
 I'd play incessantly upon these jades,  
 Even till unfenced desolation  
 Leave them as naked as the vulgar air.  
 That done, dissever your united strengths,  
 And part your mingled colours once again;  
 Turn face to face, and bloody point to point:  
 Then, in a moment, fortune shall cull forth  
 Out of one side her happy minion;  
 To whom in favour she shall give the day,  
 And kiss him with a glorious victory.  
 How like you this wild counsel, mighty states?  
 Smacks it not something of the policy?

*K. John.* Now, by the sky that hangs above our heads,  
 I like it well;—France, shall we knit our powers,  
 And lay this Angiers even with the ground;  
 Then, after, fight who shall be king of it?

*Bast.* An if thou hast the mettle of a king,—  
 Being wrong'd, as we are, by this peevish town,—  
 Turn thou the mouth of thy artillery,  
 As we will ours, against these saucy walls:  
 And when that we have dash'd them to the ground,  
 Why, then defy each other; and, pell-mell,  
 Make work upon ourselves, for heaven, or hell.

*K. Phi.* Let it be so:—Say, where will you assault?

*K. John.* We from the west will send destruction  
 Into the city's bosom.

*Aust.* I from the north.

*K. Phi.* Our thunder from the south,  
Shall rain their drift of bullets on this town.

*Bast.* O prudent discipline! From north to south;  
Austria and France shoot in each other's mouth: [*Aside.*  
I'll stir them to it:—Come, away, away!

*1 Cit.* Hear us, great kings: vouchsafe a while to stay,  
And I shall show you peace, and fair-fac'd league;  
Win you this city without stroke, or wound;  
Rescue those breathing lives to die in beds,  
That here come sacrifices for the field:  
Perséver not, but hear me, mighty kings.

*K. John.* Speak on, with favour; we are bent to hear.

*1 Cit.* That daughter there of Spain, the lady Blanch,  
Is near to England; Look upon the years  
Of Lewis the Dauphin, and that lovely maid:  
If lusty love should go in quest of beauty,  
Where should he find it fairer than in Blanch?  
If zealous love should go in search of virtue,  
Where should he find it purer than in Blanch?  
If love ambitious sought a match of birth,  
Whose veins bound richer blood than lady Blanch?  
Such as she is, in beauty, virtue, birth,  
Is the young Dauphin every way complete:  
If not complete, O say, he is not she;  
And she again wants nothing, to name want,  
If want it be not, that she is not he:  
He is the half part of a blessed man,  
Left to be finished by such a she;  
And she a fair divided excellence,  
Whose fulness of perfection lies in him.  
O, two such silver currents, when they join,  
Do glorify the banks that bound them in:

And two such shores to two such streams made one,  
 Two such controlling bounds shall you be, kings,  
 To these two princes, if you marry them.  
 This union shall do more than battery can,  
 To our fast-closed gates; for, at this match,  
 With swifter spleen than powder can enforce,  
 The mouth of passage shall we fling wide ope,  
 And give you entrance; but, without this match,  
 The sea enraged is not half so deaf,  
 Lions more confident, mountains and rocks  
 More free from motion; no, not death himself  
 In mortal fury half so peremptory,  
 As we to keep this city.

*Bast.* Here's a stay,  
 That shakes the rotten carcase of old death  
 Out of his rags! Here's a large mouth, indeed,  
 That spits forth death, and mountains, rocks, and seas;  
 Talks as familiarly of roaring lions,  
 As maids of thirteen do of puppy-dogs!  
 What cannoneer begot this lusty blood?  
 He speaks plain cannon, fire, and smoke, and bounce;  
 He gives the bastinado with his tongue;  
 Our ears are cudgel'd; not a word of his,  
 But buffets better than a fist of France:  
 Zounds! I was never so bethump'd with words,  
 Since I first call'd my brother's father, dad.

*Eli.* Son, list to this conjunction, make this match;  
 Give with our niece a dowry large enough:  
 For by this knot thou shalt so surely tie  
 Thy now unsur'd assurance to the crown,  
 That yon green boy shall have no sun to ripe  
 The bloom that promiseth a mighty fruit.  
 I see a yielding in the looks of France;



Mark, how they whisper: urge them, while their  
souls

Are capable of this ambition:

Lest zeal, now melted, by the windy breath  
Of soft petitions, pity, and remorse,  
Cool and congeal again to what it was.

*I Cit.* Why answer not the double majesties  
This friendly treaty of our threaten'd town?

*K. Phi.* Speak England first, that hath been forward  
first

To speak unto this city: What say you?

*K. John.* If that the Dauphin there, thy princely son,  
Can in this book of beauty read, I love,  
Her dowry shall weigh equal with a queen:  
For Anjou, and fair Touraine, Maine, Poitiers,  
And all that we upon this side the sea  
(Except this city now by us besieg'd,)  
Find liable to our crown and dignity,  
Shall gild her bridal bed; and make her rich  
In titles, honours, and promotions,  
As she in beauty, education, blood,  
Holds hand with any princess of the world.

*K. Phi.* What say'st thou, boy? look in the lady's  
face.

*Lew.* I do, my lord, and in her eye I find  
A wonder, or a wondrous miracle,  
The shadow of myself form'd in her eye;  
Which, being but the shadow of your son,  
Becomes a sun, and makes your son a shadow:  
I do protest, I never lov'd myself,  
Till now infix'd I beheld myself,  
Drawn in the flattering table of her eye.

[*Whispers with BLANCH.*]

*Bast.* Drawn in the flattering table of her eye!—  
 Hang'd in the frowning wrinkle of her brow!—  
 And quarter'd in her heart!—he doth espy  
 Himself love's traitor: This is pity now,  
 That hang'd, and drawn, and quarter'd, there should be,  
 In such a love, so vile a lout as he.

*Blanch.* My uncle's will, in this respect, is mine:  
 If he see aught in you, that makes him like,  
 That any thing he sees, which moves his liking,  
 I can with ease translate it to my will;  
 Or, if you will, (to speak more properly,)  
 I will enforce it easily to my love.  
 Further I will not flatter you, my lord,  
 That all I see in you is worthy love,  
 Than this,—that nothing do I see in you,  
 (Though churlish thoughts themselves should be your  
 judge,)

That I can find should merit any hate.

*K. John.* What say these young ones? What say you,  
 my niece?

*Blanch.* That she is bound in honour still to do  
 What you in wisdom shall vouchsafe to say.

*K. John.* Speak then, prince Dauphin; can you love  
 this lady?

*Lew.* Nay, ask me if I can refrain from love;  
 For I do love her most unfeignedly.

*K. John.* Then do I give Volquessen, Touraine,  
 Maine,  
 Poitiers, and Anjou, these five provinces,  
 With her to thee; and this addition more,  
 Full thirty thousand marks of English coin.—  
 Philip of France, if thou be pleas'd withal,  
 Command thy son and daughter to join hands

*K. Phi.* It likes us well ;—Young princes, close your hands.

*Aust.* And your lips too ; for, I am well assur'd, That I did so, when I was first assur'd.

*K. Phi.* Now, citizens of Angiers, ope your gates, Let in that amity which you have made ; For at saint Mary's chapel, presently, The rites of marriage shall be solemniz'd.— Is not the lady Constance in this troop ?— I know, she is not ; for this match, made up, Her presence would have interrupted much :— Where is she and her son ? tell me, who knows.

*Lew.* She is sad and passionate at your highness' tent.

*K. Phi.* And, by my faith, this league, that we have made,

Will give her sadness very little cure.— Brother of England, how may we content This widow lady ? In her right we came ; Which we, God knows, have turn'd another way, To our own vantage.

*K. John.* We will heal up all ; For we'll create young Arthur duke of Bretagne, And earl of Richmond ; and this rich fair town We make him lord of.—Call the lady Constance ; Some speedy messenger bid her repair To our solemnity :—I trust we shall, If not fill up the measure of her will, Yet in some measure satisfy her so, That we shall stop her exclamation. Go we, as well as haste will suffer us, To this unlook'd for unprepared pomp.

[*Exeunt all but the Bastard.*—*The Citizens retire from the walls.* 4

*Bast.* Mad world! mad kings! mad composition!  
John, to stop Arthur's title in the whole,  
Hath willingly departed with a part:  
And France, (whose armour conscience buckled on;  
Whom zeal and charity brought to the field,  
As God's own soldier,) rounded in the ear  
With that same purpose-changer, that sly devil;  
That broker, that still breaks the pate of faith;  
That daily break-vow; he that wins of all,  
Of kings, of beggars, old men, young men, maids;—  
Who having no external thing to lose  
But the word maid,—cheats the poor maid of that;  
That smooth-fac'd gentleman, tickling commodity,—  
Commodity, the bias of the world;  
The world, who of itself is peised well,  
Made to run even, upon even ground;  
Till this advantage, this vile drawing bias,  
This sway of motion, this commodity,  
Makes it take head from all indifferency,  
From all direction, purpose, course, intent:  
And this same bias, this commodity,  
This bawd, this broker, this all-changing word,  
Clapp'd on the outward eye of fickle France,  
Hath drawn him from his own determin'd aid,  
From a resolv'd and honourable war,  
To a most base and vile-concluded peace.—  
And why rail I on this commodity?  
But for because he hath not woo'd me yet:  
Not that I have the power to clutch my hand,  
When his fair angels would salute my palm:  
But for my hand, as unattempted yet,  
Like a poor beggar, raieth on the rich.  
Well, whiles I am a beggar, I will rail,

And say,—there is no sin, but to be rich;  
 And being rich, my virtue then shall be,  
 To say,—there is no vice, but beggary:  
 Since kings break faith upon commodity,  
 Gain, be my lord! for I will worship thee! [Exit.

---

 ACT III.

SCENE I.—*The same. The French king's tent.*

*Enter CONSTANCE, ARTHUR, and SALISBURY.*

*Const.* Gone to be married! gone to swear a peace!  
 False blood to false blood join'd! Gone to be friends!  
 Shall Lewis have Blanch? and Blanch those provinces?  
 It is not so; thou hast misspoke, misheard;  
 Be well advis'd, tell o'er thy tale again:  
 It cannot be; thou dost but say, 'tis so:  
 I trust, I may not trust thee; for thy word  
 Is but the vain breath of a common man:  
 Believe me, I do not believe thee, man;  
 I have a king's oath to the contrary.  
 Thou shalt be punish'd for thus frightening me,  
 For I am sick, and capable of fears;  
 Oppress'd with wrongs, and therefore full of fears;  
 A widow, husbandless, subject to fears;  
 A woman, naturally born to fears;  
 And though thou now confess, thou didst but jest,  
 With my vex'd spirits I cannot take a truce,  
 But they will quake and tremble all this day.

What dost thou mean by shaking of thy head?  
 Why dost thou look so sadly on my son?  
 What means that hand upon that breast of thine?  
 Why holds thine eye that lamentable rheum,  
 Like a proud river peering o'er his bounds?  
 Be these sad signs confirmers of thy words?  
 Then speak again; not all thy former tale,  
 But this one word, whether thy tale be true.

*Sal.* As true, as, I believe, you think them false,  
 That give you cause to prove my saying true.

*Const.* O, if thou teach me to believe this sorrow,  
 Teach thou this sorrow how to make me die;  
 And let belief and life encounter so,  
 As doth the fury of two desperate men,  
 Which, in the very meeting, fall, and die.—  
 Lewis marry Blanch! O, boy, then where art thou?  
 France friend with England! what becomes of me?—  
 Fellow, be gone; I cannot brook thy sight;  
 This news hath made thee a most ugly man.

*Sal.* What other harm have I, good lady, done,  
 But spoke the harm that is by others done?

*Const.* Which harm within itself so heinous is,  
 As it makes harmful all that speak of it.

*Arth.* I do beseech you, madam, be content.

*Const.* If thou, that bid'st me be content, wert grim,  
 Ugly, and sland'rous to thy mother's womb,  
 Full of displeasing blots, and sightless stains,  
 Lame, foolish, crooked, swart, prodigious,  
 Patch'd with foul moles, and eye-offending marks,  
 I would not care, I then would be content;  
 For then I should not love thee; no, nor thou  
 Become thy great birth, nor deserve a crown.  
 But thou art fair; and at thy birth, dear boy!

Nature and fortune join'd to make thee great:  
 Of nature's gifts thou may'st with lilies boast,  
 And with the half-blown rose: but fortune, O!  
 She is corrupted, chang'd, and won from thee;  
 She adulterates hourly with thine uncle John;  
 And with her golden hand hath pluck'd on France  
 To tread down fair respect of sovereignty,  
 And made his majesty the bawd to theirs.  
 France is a bawd to fortune, and king John;  
 That strumpet fortune, that usurping John:—  
 Tell me, thou fellow, is not France forsworn?  
 Evenom him with words; or get thee gone,  
 And leave those woes alone, which I alone,  
 Am bound to under-bear.

*Sal.* Pardon me, madam,  
 I may not go without you to the kings.

*Const.* Thou may'st, thou shalt, I will not go with  
 thee:

I will instruct my sorrows to be proud;  
 For grief is proud, and makes his owner stout.  
 To me, and to the state of my great grief,  
 Let kings assemble; for my grief's so great,  
 That no supporter but the huge firm earth  
 Can hold it up: here I and sorrow sit;  
 Here is my throne, bid kings come bow to it.

*[She throws herself on the ground.]*

*Enter King JOHN, King PHILIP, LEWIS, BLANCH,  
 ELINOR, Bastard, AUSTRIA, and Attendants.*

*K. Phi.* 'Tis true, fair daughter; and this blessed day,  
 Ever in France shall be kept festival:  
 To solemnize this day, the glorious sun  
 Stays in his course, and plays the alchemist;

Turning, with splendor of his precious eye,  
 The meagre cloddy earth to glittering gold :  
 The yearly course, that brings this day about,  
 Shall never see it but a holyday.

*Const.* A wicked day, and not a holyday!—

[*Rising.*]

What hath this day deserved? what hath it done ;  
 That it in golden letters should be set,  
 Among the high tides, in the kalendar?  
 Nay, rather, turn this day out of the week ;  
 This day of shame, oppression, perjury :  
 Or, if it must stand still, let wives with child  
 Pray, that their burdens may not fall this day,  
 Lest that their hopes prodigiously be cross'd :  
 But on this day, let seamen fear no wreck ;  
 No bargains break, that are not this day made :  
 This day, all things begun come to ill end ;  
 Yea, faith itself to hollow falsehood change !

*K. Phi.* By heaven, lady, you shall have no cause  
 To curse the fair proceedings of this day :  
 Have I not pawn'd to you my majesty?

*Const.* You have beguil'd me with a counterfeit,  
 Resembling majesty; which, being touch'd, and tried,  
 Proves valueless: You are forsworn, forsworn ;  
 You came in arms to spill mine enemies' blood,  
 But now in arms you strengthen it with yours :  
 The grappling vigour and rough frown of war,  
 Is cold in amity and painted peace,  
 And our oppression hath made up this league:—  
 Arm, arm, you heavens, against these perjur'd kings !  
 A widow cries; be husband to me, heavens !  
 Let not the hours of this ungodly day  
 Wear out the day in peace; but, ere sunset,



Set armed discord 'twixt these perjur'd kings!  
Hear me, O, hear me!

*Aust.* Lady Constance, peace.

*Const.* War! war! no peace! peace is to me a war.  
O Lymoges! O Austria! thou dost shame  
That bloody spoil: Thou slave, thou wretch, thou  
coward;

Thou little valiant, great in villainy!  
Thou ever strong upon the stronger side!  
Thou fortune's champion, that dost never fight  
But when her humorous ladyship is by  
To teach thee safety! thou art perjur'd too,  
And sooth'st up greatness. What a fool art thou,  
A ramping fool; to brag, and stamp, and swear,  
Upon my party! Thou cold-blooded slave,  
Hast thou not spoke like thunder on my side?  
Been sworn my soldier? bidding me depend  
Upon thy stars, thy fortune, and thy strength?  
And dost thou now fall over to my foes?  
Thou wear a lion's hide! doff it for shame,  
And hang a calf's-skin on those recreant limbs.

*Aust.* O, that a man should speak those words to me!

*Bast.* And hang a calf's-skin on those recreant limbs.

*Aust.* Thou dar'st not say so, villain, for thy life.

*Bast.* And hang a calf's-skin on those recreant limbs.

*K. John.* We like not this; thou dost forget thyself.

*Enter PANDULPH.*

*K. Phi.* Here comes the holy legate of the pope.

*Pand.* Hail, you anointed deputies of heaven!—  
To thee, king John, my holy errand is.  
I Pandulph, of fair Milan cardinal,  
And from pope Innocent the legate here,

Do, in his name, religiously demand,  
 Why thou against the church, our holy mother,  
 So wilfully dost spurn; and, force perforce,  
 Keep Stephen Langton, chosen archbishop  
 Of Canterbury, from that holy see?  
 This, in our 'foresaid holy father's name,  
 Pope Innocent, I do demand of thee.

*K. John.* What earthly name to interrogatories,  
 Can task the free breath of a sacred king?  
 'Thou canst not, cardinal, devise a name  
 So slight, unworthy, and ridiculous,  
 To charge me to an answer, as the pope.  
 Tell him this tale; and from the mouth of England,  
 Add thus much more,—That no Italian priest  
 Shall tithe or toll in our dominions;  
 But as we under heaven are supreme head,  
 So, under him, that great supremacy,  
 Where we do reign, we will alone uphold,  
 Without th' assistance of a mortal hand:  
 So tell the pope; all reverence set apart,  
 To him, and his usurp'd authority.

*K. Phi.* Brother of England, you blaspheme in this.

*K. John.* Though you, and all the kings of Christen-  
 dom,  
 Are led so grossly by this meddling priest,  
 Dreading the curse that money may buy out;  
 And, by the merit of vile gold, dross, dust,  
 Purchase corrupted pardon of a man,  
 Who, in that sale, sells pardon from himself:  
 Though you, and all the rest, so grossly led,  
 This juggling witchcraft with revenue cherish;  
 Yet I, alone, alone do me oppose  
 Against the pope, and count his friends my foes.

*Pand.* Then, by the lawful power that I have,  
 Thou shalt stand curs'd, and excommunicate:  
 And blessed shall he be, that doth revolt  
 From his allegiance to an heretick;  
 And meritorious shall that hand be call'd,  
 Canonized, and worship'd as a saint,  
 That takes away by any secret course  
 Thy hateful life.

*Const.* O, lawful let it be,  
 That I have room with Rome to curse a while!  
 Good father cardinal, cry thou, amen,  
 To my keen curses; for, without my wrong,  
 There is no tongue hath power to curse him right.

*Pand.* There's law and warrant, lady, for my curse.

*Const.* And for mine too; when law can do no right,  
 Let it be lawful, that law bar no wrong:  
 Law cannot give my child his kingdom here;  
 For he, that holds his kingdom, holds the law:  
 Therefore, since law itself is perfect wrong,  
 How can the law forbid my tongue to curse?

*Pand.* Philip of France, on peril of a curse,  
 Let go the hand of that arch-heretick;  
 And raise the power of France upon his head,  
 Unless he do submit himself to Rome.

*Eli.* Look'st thou pale, France? do not let go thy  
 hand.

*Const.* Look to that, devil! lest that France repent,  
 And, by disjoining hands, hell lose a soul.

*Aust.* King Philip, listen to the cardinal.

*Bast.* And hang a calf's-skin on his recreant limbs.

*Aust.* Well, ruffian, I must pocket up these wrongs,  
 Because——

*Bast.* Your breeches best may carry them.

*K. John.* Philip, what say'st thou to the cardinal?

*Const.* What should he say, but as the cardinal?

*Lew.* Bethink you, father; for the difference

Is, purchase of a heavy curse from Rome,

Or the light loss of England for a friend:

Forgo the easier.

*Blanch.* That's the curse of Rome.

*Const.* O Lewis, stand fast; the devil tempts thee here,

In likeness of a new untrimmed bride.

*Blanch.* The lady Constance speaks not from her faith,  
But from her need.

*Const.* O, if thou grant my need,

Which only lives but by the death of faith,

That need must needs infer this principle,—

That faith would live again by death of need;

O, then, tread down my need, and faith mounts up;

Keep my need up, and faith is trodden down.

*K. John.* The king is mov'd, and answers not to this.

*Const.* O, be remov'd from him, and answer well.

*Aust.* Do so, king Philip; hang no more in doubt.

*Bas.* Hang nothing but a calf's-skin, most sweet  
lout.

*K. Phi.* I am perplex'd, and know not what to say.

*Pand.* What can'st thou say, but will perplex thee  
more,

If thou stand excommunicate, and curs'd?

*K. Phi.* Good reverend father, make my person yours,

And tell me, how you would bestow yourself.

This royal hand and mine are newly knit;

And the conjunction of our inward souls

Married in league, coupled and link'd together

With all religious strength of sacred vows;

The latest breath that gave the sound of words,  
 Was deep-sworn faith, peace, amity, true love,  
 Between our kingdoms, and our royal selves;  
 And even before this truce, but new before,—  
 No longer than we well could wash our hands,  
 To clap this royal bargain up of peace,——  
 Heaven knows, they were besmear'd and overstain'd  
 With slaughter's pencil; where revenge did paint  
 The fearful difference of incensed kings:  
 And shall these hands, so lately purg'd of blood,  
 So newly join'd in love, so strong in both,  
 Unyoke this seizure, and this kind regret?  
 Play fast and loose with faith? so jest with heaven,  
 Make such unconstant children of ourselves,  
 As now again to snatch our palm from palm;  
 Unswear faith sworn; and on the marriage bed  
 Of smiling peace to march a bloody host,  
 And make a riot on the gentle brow  
 Of true sincerity? O holy sir,  
 My reverend father, let it not be so:  
 Out of your grace, devise, ordain, impose  
 Some gentle order; and then we shall be bless'd  
 To do your pleasure, and continue friends.

*Pand.* All form is formless, order orderless,  
 Save what is opposite to England's love.  
 Therefore, to arms! be champion of our church!  
 Or let the church, our mother, breathe her curse,  
 A mother's curse, on her revolting son.  
 France, thou may'st hold a serpent by the tongue,  
 A cased lion by the mortal paw,  
 A fasting tiger safer by the tooth,  
 Than keep in peace that hand which thou dost hold.

*K. Phi.* I may disjoin my hand, but not my faith.

*Pand.* So mak'st thou faith an enemy to faith;  
And, like a civil war, set'st oath to oath,  
Thy tongue against thy tongue. O, let thy vow  
First made to heaven, first be to heaven perform'd;  
That is, to be the champion of our church!  
What since thou swor'st, is sworn against thyself,  
And may not be performed by thyself:  
For that, which thou hast sworn to do amiss,  
Is not amiss when it is truly done;  
And being not done, where doing tends to ill,  
The truth is then most done not doing it:  
The better act of purposes mistook  
Is, to mistake again; though indirect,  
Yet indirection thereby grows direct,  
And falsehood falsehood cures; as fire cools fire,  
Within the scorched veins of one new burn'd.  
It is religion, that doth make vows kept;  
But thou hast sworn against religion;  
By what thou swear'st, against the thing thou swear'st;  
And mak'st an oath the surety for thy truth  
Against an oath: The truth thou art unsure  
To swear, swear only not to be forsworn;  
Else, what a mockery should it be to swear?  
But thou dost swear only to be forsworn;  
And most forsworn, to keep what thou dost swear.  
Therefore, thy latter vows, against thy first,  
Is in thyself rebellion to thyself:  
And better conquest never canst thou make,  
Than arm thy constant and thy nobler parts  
Against those giddy loose suggestions:  
Upon which better part our prayers come in,  
If thou vouchsafe them: but, if not, then know,  
The pegil of our curses light on thee;

So heavy, as thou shalt not shake them off,  
But, in despair, die under their black weight.

*Aust.* Rebellion, flat rebellion!

*Bast.* Will't not be?

Will not a calf's skin stop that mouth of thine?

*Lew.* Father, to arms!

*Blanch.* Upon thy wedding day?

Against the blood that thou hast married?

What, shall our feast be kept with slaughter'd men?

Shall braying trumpets, and loud churlish drums,—

Clamours of hell,—be measures to our pomp?

O husband, hear me!—ah, alack, how new

Is husband in my mouth!—even for that name,

Which till this time my tongue did ne'er pronounce,

Upon my knee I beg, go not to arms

Against mine uncle.

*Const.* O, upon my knee,

Made hard with kneeling, I do pray to thee,

Thou virtuous Dauphin, alter not the doom

Fore-thought by heaven.

*Blanch.* Now shall I see thy love; What motive may  
Be stronger with thee than the name of wife?

*Const.* That which upholdeth him that thee upholds,  
His honour: O, thine honour, Lewis, thine honour!

*Lew.* I muse, your majesty doth seem so cold,  
When such profound respects do pull you on.

*Pand.* I will denounce a curse upon his head.

*K. Phi.* Thou shalt not need:—England, I'll fall  
from thee.

*Const.* O fair return of banish'd majesty!

*Eli.* O foul revolt of French inconstancy!

*K. John.* France, thou shalt rue this hour within  
this hour.

*Bast.* Old time the clock-setter, that bald sexton time,  
Is it as he will? well then, France shall rue.

*Blanch.* The sun's o'er-cast with blood: Fair day, adieu!  
Which is the side that I must go withal?  
I am with both: each army hath a hand;  
And, in their rage, I having hold of both,  
They whirl asunder, and dismember me.  
Husband, I cannot pray that thou may'st win;  
Uncle, I needs must pray that thou may'st lose;  
Father, I may not wish the fortune thine;  
Grandam, I will not wish thy wishes thrive:  
Whoever wins, on that side shall I lose;  
Assured loss, before the match be play'd.

*Lew.* Lady, with me; with me thy fortune lies.

*Blanch.* There where my fortune lives, there my life  
dies.

*K. John.* Cousin, go draw our puissance together.—  
[*Exit Bastard.*]

France, I am burn'd up with inflaming wrath;  
A rage, whose heat hath this condition,  
'Than nothing can allay, nothing but blood,  
The blood, and dearest-valu'd blood, of France.

*K. Phi.* Thy rage shall burn thee up, and thou shalt turn  
To ashes, ere our blood shall quench that fire:  
Look to thyself, thou art in jeopardy.

*K. John.* No more than he that threatens.—To arms  
let's hie! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*The same. Plains near Angiers.*

*Alarums, excursions. Enter the Bastard; with AUSTRIA'S  
head.*

*Bast.* Now, by my life, this day grows wondrous hot;



Some airy devil hovers in the sky,  
And pours down mischief. Austria's head lie there;  
While Philip breathes.

*Enter King JOHN, ARTHUR, and HUBERT.*

*K. John.* Hubert, keep this boy:—Philip, make up:  
My mother is assailed in our tent,  
And ta'en, I fear.

*Bast.* My lord, I rescu'd her;  
Her highness is in safety, fear you not:  
But on, my liege; for very little pains  
Will bring this labour to an happy end. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*The same.*

*Alarums; excursions; retreat. Enter King JOHN, ELINOR, ARTHUR, the Bastard, HUBERT, and Lords.*

*K. John.* So shall it be; your grace shall stay behind,  
[*To ELINOR.*]

So strongly guarded.—Cousin, look not sad:  
[*To ARTHUR.*]

Thy grandam loves thee; and thy uncle will  
As dear be to thee as thy father was.

*Arth.* O, this will make my mother die with grief.

*K. John.* Cousin, [*To the Bastard.*] away for England;  
haste before:

And, ere our coming, see thou shake the bags  
Of hoarding abbots; angels imprisoned  
Set thou at liberty: the fat ribs of peace  
Must by the hungry now be fed upon:  
Use our commission in his utmost force.

*Bast.* Bell, book, and candle shall not drive me back,  
When gold and silver becks me to come on.

I leave your highness :—Grandam, I will pray  
(If ever I remember to be holy,)

For your fair safety; so I kiss your hand.

*Eli.* Farewell, my gentle cousin.

*K. John.* Coz, farewell. [*Exit Bastard*

*Eli.* Come hither, little kinsman; hark, a word.

[*She takes ARTHUR aside.*

*K. John.* Come hither, Hubert. O my gentle Hubert,  
We owe thee much; within this wall of flesh

There is a soul, counts thee her creditor,

And with advantage means to pay thy love:

And, my good friend, thy voluntary oath

Lives in this bosom, dearly cherished.

Give me thy hand. I had a thing to say,—

But I will fit it with some better time.

By heaven, Hubert, I am almost asham'd

To say what good respect I have of thee.

*Hub.* I am much bounden to your majesty.

*K. John.* Good friend, thou hast no cause to say so yet:

But thou shalt have; and creep time ne'er so slow,

Yet it shall come, for me to do thee good.

I had a thing to say,—But let it go:

The sun is in the heaven, and the proud day,

Attended with the pleasures of the world,

Is all too wanton, and too full of gawds,

To give me audience:—If the midnight bell

Did, with his iron tongue and brazen mouth,

Sound one unto the drowsy race of night;

If this same were a church-yard where we stand,

And thou possessed with a thousand wrongs;

Or if that surly spirit, melancholy,

Had bak'd thy blood, and made it heavy, thick;

(Which, else, runs tickling up and down the veins,

Making that idiot, laughter, keep men's eyes,  
 And strain their cheeks to idle merriment,  
 A passion hateful to my purposes;)   
 Or if that thou could'st see me without eyes,  
 Hear me without thine ears, and make reply  
 Without a tongue, using conceit alone,  
 Without eyes, ears, and harmful sound of words;  
 Then, in despite of brooded watchful day,  
 I would into thy bosom pour my thoughts:  
 But ah, I will not:—Yet I love thee well;  
 And, by my troth, I think, thou lov'st me well.

*Hub.* So well, that what you bid me undertake,  
 Though that my death were adjunct to my act,  
 By heaven, I'd do't.

*K. John.* Do not I know, thou would'st?  
 Good Hubert, Hubert, Hubert, throw thine eye  
 On yon young boy: I'll tell thee what, my friend,  
 He is a very serpent in my way;  
 And, wheresoe'er this foot of mine doth tread,  
 He lies before me: Dost thou understand me?  
 Thou art his keeper.

*Hub.* And I will keep him so,  
 That he shall not offend your majesty.

*K. John.* Death.

*Hub.* My lord?

*K. John.* A grave.

*Hub.* He shall not live.

*K. John.* Enough.

I could be merry now: Hubert, I love thee;  
 Well, I'll not say what I intend for thee:  
 Remember.—Madam, fare you well:  
 I'll send those powers o'er to your majesty.

*Eli.* My blessing go with thee!

*K. John.* For England, cousin  
Hubert shall be your man, attend on you  
With all true duty.—On toward Calais, ho! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*The same. The French king's tent.*

*Enter King PHILIP, LEWIS, PANDULPH, and Attendants.*

*K. Phi.* So, by a roaring tempest on the flood,  
A whole armado of convicted sail  
Is scatter'd and disjoin'd from fellowship.

*Pand.* Courage and comfort! all shall yet go well.

*K. Phi.* What can go well, when we have run so ill?  
Are we not beaten? Is not Angiers lost?  
Arthur ta'en prisoner? divers dear friends slain?  
And bloody England into England gone,  
O'erbearing interruption, spite of France?

*Lew.* What he hath won, that hath he fortified:  
So hot a speed with such advice dispos'd,  
Such temperate order in so fierce a cause,  
Doth want example: Who hath read, or heard,  
Of any kindred action like to this?

*K. Phi.* Well could I bear that England had this  
praise,  
So we could find some pattern of our shame.

*Enter CONSTANCE.*

Look, who comes here! a grave unto a soul;  
Holding th' eternal spirit, against her will,  
In the vile prison of afflicted breath:—  
I pr'ythee, lady, go away with me.

*Const.* Lo, now! now see the issue of your peace!

*K. Phi.* Patience, good lady! comfort, gentle Con-  
stance!

*Const.* No, I defy all counsel, all redress,  
 But that which ends all counsel, true redress,  
 Death, death:—O amiable lovely death!  
 Thou odoriferous stench! sound rottenness!  
 Arise forth from the couch of lasting night,  
 Thou hate and terror to prosperity,  
 And I will kiss thy détestable bones;  
 And put my eye-balls in thy vaulty brows;  
 And ring these fingers with thy household worms;  
 And stop this gap of breath with fulsome dust,  
 And be a carrion monster like thyself:  
 Come, grin on me; and I will think thou smil'st,  
 And buss thee as thy wife! Misery's love,  
 O, come to me!

*K. Phi.* O fair affliction, peace.

*Const.* No, no, I will not, having breath to cry:—  
 O, that my tongue were in the thunder's mouth!  
 Then with a passion would I shake the world;  
 And rouse from sleep that fell anatomy,  
 Which cannot hear a lady's feeble voice,  
 Which scorns a modern invocation.

*Pand.* Lady, you utter madness, and not sorrow.

*Const.* Thou art not holy to belie me so;  
 I am not mad: this hair I tear, is mine;  
 My name is Constance; I was Geoffrey's wife;  
 Young Arthur is my son, and he is lost:  
 I am not mad;—I would to heaven, I were!  
 For then, 'tis like I should forget myself:  
 O, if I could, what grief should I forget!—  
 Preach some philosophy to make me mad,  
 And thou shalt be canoniz'd, cardinal;  
 For, being not mad, but sensible of grief,  
 My reasonable part produces reason.

How I may be deliver'd of these woes,  
 And teaches me to kill or hang myself:  
 If I were mad, I should forget my son;  
 Or madly think, a babe of clouts were he:  
 I am not mad; too well, too well I feel  
 The different plague of each calamity.

*K. Phi.* Bind up those tresses: O, what love I note  
 In the fair multitude of those her hairs!  
 Where but by chance a silver drop hath fallen,  
 Even to that drop ten thousand wiry friends  
 Do glew themselves in sociable grief;  
 Like true, inseparable, faithful loves,  
 Sticking together in calamity.

*Const.* To England, if you will.

*K. Phi.* Bind up your hairs.

*Const.* Yes, that I will; And wherefore will I do it?  
 I tore them from their bonds; and cried aloud,  
*O that these hands could so redeem my son,*  
*As they have given these hairs their liberty!*  
 But now I envy at their liberty,  
 And will again commit them to their bonds,  
 Because my poor child is a prisoner.—  
 And, father cardinal, I have heard you say,  
 That we shall see and know our friends in heaven:  
 If that be true, I shall see my boy again;  
 For, since the birth of Cain, the first male child,  
 To him that did but yesterday suspire,  
 There was not such a gracious creature born.  
 But now will canker sorrow eat my bud,  
 And chase the native beauty from his cheek,  
 And he will look as hollow as a ghost;  
 As dim and meagre as an ague's fit;  
 And so he'll die; and, rising so again,

When I shall meet him in the court of heaven  
I shall not know him: therefore never, never  
Must I behold my pretty Arthur more.

*Pand.* You hold too heinous a respect of grief.

*Const.* He talks to me, that never had a son.

*K. Phi.* You are as fond of grief, as of your child.

*Const.* Grief fills the room up of my absent child,  
Lies in his bed, walks up and down with me;  
Puts on his pretty looks, repeats his words,  
Remembers me of all his gracious parts,  
Stuffs out his vacant garments with his form;  
Then, have I reason to be fond of grief.  
Fare you well: had you such a loss as I,  
I could give better comfort than you do.—  
I will not keep this form upon my head,

*[Tearing off her head-dress.]*

When there is such disorder in my wit.

O lord! my boy, my Arthur, my fair son!

My life, my joy, my food, my all the world!

My widow-comfort, and my sorrows' cure! *[Exit.]*

*K. Phi.* I fear some outrage, and I'll follow her. *[Exit.]*

*Lew.* There's nothing in this world, can make me joy:

Life is as tedious as a twice-told tale,

Vexing the dull ear of a drowsy man;

And bitter shame hath spoil'd the sweet world's taste,

That it yield's naught, but shame, and bitterness.

*Pand.* Before the curing of a strong disease,

Even in the instant of repair and health,

The fit is strongest; evils, that take leave,

On their departure most of all show evil:

What have you lost by losing of this day?

*Lew.* All days of glory, joy, and happiness.

*Pand.* If you had won it, certainly, you had.

No, no : when fortune means to men most good,  
 She looks upon them with a threatening eye.  
 'Tis strange, to think how much king John hath lost  
 In this which he accounts so clearly won :  
 Are not you griev'd, that Arthur is his prisoner?

*Lew.* As heartily, as he is glad he hath him.

*Pand.* Your mind is all as youthful as your blood.  
 Now hear me speak, with a prophetick spirit ;  
 For even the breath of what I mean to speak  
 Shall blow each dust, each straw, each little rub,  
 Out of the path which shall directly lead  
 Thy foot to England's throne; and, therefore, mark.  
 John hath seiz'd Arthur ; and it cannot be,  
 That, whiles warm life plays in that infant's veins,  
 The misplac'd John should entertain an hour,  
 One minute, nay, one quiet breath of rest :  
 A scepter, snatch'd with an unruly hand,  
 Must be as boisterously maintain'd as gain'd :  
 And he, that stands upon a slippery place,  
 Makes nice of no vile hold to stay him up :  
 That John may stand, then Arthur needs must fall ;  
 So be it, for it cannot be but so.

*Lew.* But what shall I gain by young Arthur's fall ?

*Pand.* You, in the right of lady Blanch your wife,  
 May then make all the claim that Arthur did.

*Lew.* And lose it, life and all, as Arthur did.

*Pand.* How green are you, and fresh in this old world!  
 John lays you plots ; the times conspire with you :  
 For he, that steeps his safety in true blood,  
 Shall find but bloody safety, and untrue.  
 This act, so evilly born, shall cool the hearts  
 Of all his people, and freeze up their zeal ;  
 That none so small advantage shall step forth,



To check his reign, but they will cherish it:  
 No natural exhalation in the sky,  
 No scape of nature, no distemper'd day,  
 No common wind, no custom'd event,  
 But they will pluck away his natural cause,  
 And call them meteors, prodigies, and signs,  
 Abortives, présages, and tongues of heaven,  
 Plainly denouncing vengeance upon John.

*Lew.* May be, he will not touch young Arthur's life,  
 But hold himself safe in his prisonment.

*Pand.* O, sir, when he shall hear of your approach,  
 If that young Arthur be not gone already,  
 Even at that news he dies: and then the hearts  
 Of all his people shall revolt from him,  
 And kiss the lips of unacquainted change;  
 And pick strong matter of revolt, and wrath,  
 Out of the bloody fingers' ends of John.  
 Methinks, I see this hurly all on foot;  
 And, O, what better matter breeds for you,  
 Than I have nam'd!—The bastard Faulconbridge  
 Is now in England, ransacking the church,  
 Offending charity: If but a dozen French  
 Were there in arms, they would be as a call  
 To train ten thousand English to their side;  
 Or, as a little snow, tumbled about,  
 Anon becomes a mountain. O noble Dauphin,  
 Go with me to the king: 'Tis wonderful,  
 What may be wrought out of their discontent:  
 Now that their souls are topfull of offence,  
 For England go; I will whet on the king.

*Lew.* Strong reasons make strong actions: Let us go  
 If you say, ay, the king will not say, no. [Exeunt.]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—Northampton. *A room in the castle.*

*Enter HUBERT and two Attendants.*

*Hub.* Heat me these irons hot; and, look thou stand  
Within the arras: when I strike my foot  
Upon the bosom of the ground, rush forth:  
And bind the boy, which you shall find with me,  
Fast to the chair: be heedful: hence, and watch.

*I Attend.* I hope, your warrant will bear out the deed.

*Hub.* Uncleanly scruples! Fear not you: look to't.—  
[*Exeunt Attendants.*]

Young lad, come forth; I have to say with you.

*Enter ARTHUR.*

*Arth.* Good morrow, Hubert.

*Hub.* Good morrow, little prince.

*Arth.* As little prince (having so great a title  
To be more prince,) as may be.—You are sad.

*Hub.* Indeed, I have been merrier.

*Arth.* Mercy on me!  
Methinks, no oody should be sad but I:  
Yet, I remember, when I was in France,  
Young gentlemen would be as sad as night,  
Only for wantonness. By my christendom,  
So I were out of prison, and kept sheep,  
I should be as merry as the day is long;  
And so I would be here, but that I doubt  
My uncle practises more harm to me:  
He is afraid of me, and I of him:

Is it my fault that I was Geoffrey's son?  
 No, indeed, is't not; And I would to heaven,<sup>1</sup>  
 I were your son, so you would love me, Hubert.

*Hub.* If I talk to him, with his innocent prate  
 He will awake my mercy, which lies dead:  
 Therefore I will be sudden, and despatch. [*Aside.*]

*Arth.* Are you sick, Hubert? you look pale to-day:  
 In sooth, I would you were a little sick;  
 That I might sit all night, and watch with you:  
 I warrant, I love you more than you do me.

*Hub.* His words do take possession of my bosom.—  
 Read here, young Arthur. [*Showing a paper.*] How now,  
 foolish rheum! [*Aside.*]

Turning despiteous torture out of door!  
 I must be brief; lest resolution drop  
 Out at mine eyes, in tender womanish tears.—  
 Can you not read it? is it not fair writ?

*Arth.* Too fairly, Hubert, for so foul effect:  
 Must you with hot irons burn out both mine eyes?

*Hub.* Young boy, I must.

*Arth.* And will you?

*Hub.* And I will.

*Arth.* Have you the heart? When your head did but  
 ake,

I knit my handkerchief about your brows,  
 (The best I had, a princess wrought it me,)  
 And I did never ask it you again:  
 And with my hand at midnight held your head;  
 And, like the watchful minutes to the hour,  
 Still and anon cheer'd up the heavy time;  
 Saying, What lack you? and, Where lies your grief?  
 Or, What good love may I perform for you?  
 Many a poor man's son would have lain still,

And ne'er have spoke a loving word to you ;  
 But you at your sick service had a prince.  
 Nay, you may think, my love was crafty love,  
 And call it, cunning; Do, an if you will:  
 If heaven be pleas'd that you must use me ill,  
 Why, then you must.—Will you put out mine eyes?  
 These eyes, that never did, nor never shall,  
 So much as frown on you?

*Hub.* I have sworn to do it;

And with hot irons must I burn them out.

*Arth.* Ah, none, but in this iron age, would do it!  
 The iron of itself, though heat red-hot,  
 Approaching near these eyes, would drink my tears,  
 And quench his fiery indignation,  
 Even in the matter of mine innocence:  
 Nay, after that, consume away in rust,  
 But for containing fire to harm mine eye.  
 Are you more stubborn-hard than hammer'd iron?  
 An if an angel should have come to me, †  
 And told me, Hubert should put out mine eyes,  
 I would not have believ'd no tongue, but Hubert's.

*Hub.* Come forth. [Stamps.

*Re-enter Attendants, with cord, irons, &c.*

Do as I bid you do.

*Arth.* O, save me, Hubert, save me! my eyes are out,  
 Even with the fierce looks of these bloody men.

*Hub.* Give me the iron, I say, and bind him here.

*Arth.* Alas, what need you be so boist'rous-rough?  
 I will not struggle, I will stand stone-still.  
 For heaven's sake, Hubert, let me not be bound!  
 Nay, hear me, Hubert! drive these men away,  
 And I will sit as quiet as a lamb;

I will not stir, nor wince, nor speak a word,  
 Nor look upon the iron angerly:  
 Thrust but these men away, and I'll forgive you,  
 Whatever torment you do put me to.

*Hub.* Go, stand within; let me alone with him.

*I Attend.* I am best pleas'd to be from such a deed.

[*Exeunt Attendants.*]

*Arth.* Alas! I then have chid away my friend;  
 He hath a stern look, but a gentle heart:—  
 Let him come back, that his compassion may  
 Give life to yours.

*Hub.* Come, boy, prepare yourself.

*Arth.* Is there no remedy?

*Hub.* None, but to lose your eyes.

*Arth.* O heaven!—that there were but a mote in yours,  
 A grain, a dust, a gnat, a wand'ring hair,  
 Any annoyance in that precious sense!  
 Then, feeling what small things are boist'rous there,  
 Your vile intent must needs seem horrible.

*Hub.* Is this your promise? go to, hold your tongue.

*Arth.* Hubert, the utterance of a brace of tongues  
 Must needs want pleading for a pair of eyes:  
 Let me not hold my tongue; let me not, Hubert!  
 Or, Hubert, if you will, cut out my tongue,  
 So I may keep mine eyes; O, spare mine eyes;  
 Though to no use, but still to look on you!  
 Lo, by my troth, the instrument is cold,  
 And would not harm me.

*Hub.* I can heat it, boy.

*Arth.* No, in good sooth; the fire is dead with grief,  
 Being create for comfort, to be us'd  
 In undeserv'd extremes: See else yourself;  
 There is no malice in this burning coal;

The breath of heaven hath blown his spirit out,  
And strew'd repentant ashes on his head.

*Hub.* But with my breath I can revive it, boy.

*Arth.* And if you do, you will but make it blush,  
And glow with shame of your proceedings, Hubert;  
Nay, it, perchance, will sparkle in your eyes;  
And, like a dog that is compell'd to fight,  
Snatch at his master that doth tarre him on.  
All things, that you should use to do me wrong,  
Deny their office: only you do lack  
That mercy, which fierce fire, and iron, extends,  
Creatures of note, for mercy-lacking uses.

*Hub.* Well, see to live; I will not touch thine eyes  
For all the treasure that thine uncle owes:  
Yet am I sworn, and I did purpose, boy,  
With this same very iron to burn them out.

*Arth.* O, now you look like Hubert! all this while  
You were disguised.

*Hub.* Peace: no more. Adieu;  
Your uncle must not know but you are dead:  
I'll fill these dogged spies with false reports.  
And, pretty child, sleep doubtless, and secure,  
That Hubert, for the wealth of all the world,  
Will not offend thee.

*Arth.* O heaven!—I thank you, Hubert.

*Hub.* Silence; no more: Go closely in with me;  
Much danger do I undergo for thee. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*The same. A room of state in the palace.*

*Enter King JOHN, crowned; PEMBROKE, SALISBURY, and other Lords. The King takes his state.*

*K. John.* Here once again we sit, once again crown'd,  
And look'd upon, I hope, with cheerful eyes.

*Pem.* This once again, but that your highness pleas'd,  
Was once superfluous: you were crown'd before,  
And that high royalty was ne'er pluck'd off;  
The faiths of men ne'er stained with revolt;  
Fresh expectation troubled not the land,  
With any long'd-for change, or better state.

*Sal.* Therefore, to be possess'd with double pomp,  
To guard a title that was rich before,  
To gild refined gold, to paint the lily,  
To throw a perfume on the violet,  
To smooth the ice, or add another hue  
Unto the rainbow, or with taper-light  
To seek the beautiful eye of heaven to garnish,  
Is wasteful, and ridiculous excess.

*Pem.* But that your royal pleasure must be done,  
This act is as an ancient tale new told;  
And, in the last repeating, troublesome,  
Being urged at a time unseasonable.

*Sal.* In this, the antique and well-noted face  
Of plain old form is much disfigur'd:  
And, like a shifted wind unto a sail,  
It makes the course of thoughts to fetch about;  
Startles and frights consideration;  
Makes sound opinion sick, and truth suspected,  
For putting on so new a fashion'd robe.

*Pem.* When workmen strive to do better than well,

They do confound their skill in covetousness :  
 And, oftentimes, excusing of a fault,  
 Doth make the fault the worse by the excuse ;  
 As patches, set upon a little breach,  
 Discredit more in hiding of the fault,  
 Than did the fault before it was so patch'd.

*Sal.* To this effect, before you were new-crown'd,  
 We breath'd our counsel : but it pleas'd your highness  
 To overbear it ; and we are all well pleas'd ;  
 Since all and every part of what we would,  
 Doth make a stand at what your highness will.

*K. John.* Some reasons of this double coronation  
 I have possess'd you with, and think them strong ;  
 And more, more strong, (when lesser is my fear,)  
 I shall indue you with : Mean time, but ask  
 What you would have reform'd, that is not well ;  
 And well shall you perceive, how willingly  
 I will both hear and grant you your requests.

*Pem.* Then I, (as one that am the tongue of these,  
 To sound the purposes of all their hearts,)  
 Both for myself and them, (but, chief of all,  
 Your safety, for the which myself and them  
 Bend their best studies,) heartily request  
 Th' enfranchisement of Arthur ; whose restraint  
 Doth move the murmuring lips of discontent  
 To break into this dangerous argument,—  
 If, what in rest you have, in right you hold,  
 Why then your fears, (which, as they say, attend  
 The steps of wrong,) should move you to mew up  
 Your tender kinsman, and to choke his days  
 With barbarous ignorance, and deny his youth  
 The rich advantage of good exercise ?  
 That the time's enemies may not have this



To grace occasions, let it be our suit,  
That you have bid us ask his liberty;  
Which for our goods we do no further ask,  
Than whereupon our weal, on you depending,  
Counts it your weal, he have his liberty.

*K. John.* Let it be so; I do commit his youth

*Enter HUBERT.*

To your direction.—Hubert, what news with you?

*Pem.* This is the man should do the bloody deed;  
He show'd his warrant to a friend of mine:  
The image of a wicked heinous fault  
Lives in his eye; that close aspect of his  
Does show the mood of a much-troubled breast;  
And I do fearfully believe, 'tis done,  
What we so fear'd he had a charge to do.

*Sal.* The colour of the king doth come and go,  
Between his purpose and his conscience,  
Like heralds 'twixt two dreadful battles set:  
His passion is so ripe, it needs must break.

*Pem.* And, when it breaks, I fear, will issue thence  
The foul corruption of a sweet child's death.

*K. John.* We cannot hold mortality's strong hand:—  
Good lords, although my will to give is living,  
The suit which you demand is gone and dead:  
He tells us, Arthur is deceas'd to-night.

*Sal.* Indeed, we fear'd, his sickness was past cure.

*Pem.* Indeed, we heard how near his death he was,  
Before the child himself felt he was sick:  
This must be answer'd, either here, or hence.

*K. John.* Why do you bend such solemn brows on me?  
Think you, I bear the shears of destiny?  
Have I commandment on the pulse of life?

*Sal.* It is apparent foul-play; and 'tis shame,  
That greatness should so grossly offer it:  
So thrive it in your game! and so farewell.

*Pem.* Stay yet, lord Salisbury; I'll go with thee,  
And find th' inheritance of this poor child,  
His little kingdom of a forced grave.  
That blood, which ow'd the breath of all this isle,  
Three foot of it doth hold; Bad world the while!  
This must not be thus borne: this will break out  
To all our sorrows, and ere long, I doubt. [*Exeunt Lords.*]

*K. John.* They burn in indignation; I repent;  
There is no sure foundation set on blood;  
No certain life achiev'd by others' death.—

*Enter a Messenger.*

A fearful eye thou hast; Where is that blood,  
That I have seen inhabit in those cheeks?  
So foul a sky clears not without a storm:  
Pour down thy weather:—How goes all in France?

*Mess.* From France to England.—Never such a power  
For any foreign preparation,  
Was levied in the body of a land!  
The copy of your speed is learn'd by them;  
For, when you should be told they do prepare,  
The tidings come, that they are all arriv'd.

*K. John.* O, where hath our intelligence been drunk?  
Where hath it slept? Where is my mother's care?  
That such an army could be drawn in France,  
And she not hear of it?

*Mess.* My liege, her ear  
Is stopp'd with dust; the first of April, died  
Your noble mother: And, as I hear, my lord,  
The lady Constance in a 'frenzy died

Three days before: but this from rumour's tongue  
I idly heard; if true, or false, I know not.

*K. John.* Withhold thy speed, dreadful occasion!  
O, make a league with me, till I have pleas'd  
My discontented peers!—What! mother dead?  
How wildly then walks my estate in France!—  
Under whose conduct came these powers of France,  
That thou for truth giv'st out, are landed here?

*Mess.* Under the Dauphia.

*Enter the Bastard and PETER of POMFRET.*

*K. John.* Thou hast made me giddy.  
With these ill tidings.—Now, what says the world  
To your proceedings? do not seek to stuff  
My head with more ill news, for it is full.

*Bast.* But, if you be afeard to hear the worst,  
Then let the worst, unheard, fall on your head.

*K. John.* Bear with me, cousin; for I was amaz'd  
Under the tide: but now I breathe again  
Aloft the flood; and can give audience  
To any tongue, speak it of what it will.

*Bast.* How I have sped among the clergymen,  
The sums I have collected shall express  
But, as I travell'd hither through the land,  
I find the people strangely fantasied;  
Possess'd with rumours, full of idle dreams;  
Not knowing what they fear, but full of fear:  
And here's a prophet, that I brought with me  
From forth the streets of Pomfret, whom I found  
With many hundreds treading on his heels;  
To whom he sung, in rude harsh-sounding rhymes  
That, ere the next Ascension-day at noon,  
Your highness should deliver up your crown,

*K. John.* Thou idle dreamer, wherefore didst thou so?

*Peter.* Foreknowing that the truth will fall out so.

*K. John.* Hubert, away with him; imprison him;  
And on that day at noon, whereon, he says,  
I shall yield up my crown, let him be hang'd:  
Deliver him to safety, and return,  
For I must use thee.—O my gentle cousin,

[*Exit HUBERT, with PETER.*]

Hear'st thou the news abroad, who are arriv'd?

*Bast.* The French, my lord; men's mouths are full of it:  
Besides, I met lord Bigot, and lord Salisbury,  
(With eyes as red as new-enkiadled fire,)  
And others more, going to seek the grave  
Of Arthur, who, they say, is kill'd to-night  
On your suggestion.

*K. John.* Gentle kinsman, go,  
And thrust thyself into their companies:  
I have a way to win their loves again;  
Bring them before me.

*Bast.* I will seek them out.

*K. John.* Nay, but make haste; the better foot be-  
fore.—

O, let me have no subject enemies,  
When adverse foreigners affright my towns  
With dreadful pomp of stout invasion!—  
Be Mercury, set feathers to thy heels;  
And fly, like thought, from them to me again.

*Bast.* The spirit of the time shall teach me speed.

[*Exit.*]

*K. John.* Spoke like a spritful noble gentleman.—  
Go after him; for he, perhaps, shall need  
Some messenger betwixt me and the peers;  
And be thou he.

*Mess.* With all my heart, my liege. [*Exit.*  
*K. John.* My mother dead!

*Re-enter HUBERT.*

*Hub.* My lord, they say, five moons were seen to-  
 night:  
 Four fixed; and the fifth did whirl about  
 The other four, in wond'rous motion.

*K. John.* Five moons?

*Hub.* Old men, and beldams, in  
 the streets

Do prophesy upon it dangerously:  
 Young Arthur's death is common in their mouths;  
 And when they talk of him, they shake their heads,  
 And whisper one another in the ear;  
 And he, that speaks, doth gripe the hearer's wrist;  
 Whilst he, that hears, makes fearful action,  
 With wrinkled brows, with nods, with rolling eyes.  
 I saw a smith stand with his hammer, thus,  
 The whilst his iron did on the anvil cool,  
 With open mouth swallowing a tailor's news;  
 Who, with his shears and measure in his hand,  
 Standing on slippers, (which his nimble haste  
 Had falsely thrust upon contrary feet,)  
 Told of a many thousand warlike French,  
 That were embatteled and rank'd in Kent:  
 Another lean unwash'd artificer  
 Cuts off his tale, and talks of Arthur's death:

*K. John.* Why seek'st thou to possess me with these  
 fears?

Why urgest thou so oft young Arthur's death?  
 Thy hand hath murder'd him: I had mighty cause  
 To wish him dead, but thou hadst none to kill him.

*Hub.* Had none, my lord! why, did you not provoke me?

*K. John.* It is the curse of kings, to be attended  
By slaves, that take their humours for a warrant  
To break within the bloody house of life:  
And, on the winking of authority,  
To understand a law; to know the meaning  
Of dangerous majesty, when, perchance, it frowns  
More upon humour than advis'd respect.

*Hub.* Here is your hand and seal for what I did.

*K. John.* O, when the last account 'twixt heaven and earth

Is to be made, then shall this hand and seal  
Witness against us to damnation!  
How oft the sight of means to do ill deeds,  
Makes deeds ill done! Hadest not thou been by,  
A fellow by the hand of nature mark'd,  
Quoted, and sign'd, to do a deed of shame,  
This murder had not come into my mind:  
But, taking note of thy abhorr'd aspect,  
Finding thee fit for bloody villainy,  
Apt, liable, to be employ'd in danger,  
I faintly broke with thee of Arthur's death;  
And thou, to be endeared to a king,  
Made it no conscience to destroy a prince.

*Hub.* My lord,—

*K. John.* Hadst thou but shook thy head, or made  
a pause,

When I spake darkly what I purpos'd;  
Or turn'd an eye of doubt upon my face,  
As bid me tell my tale in express words;  
Deep shame had struck me dumb, made me break off,  
And those thy fears might have wrought fears in me:

But thou didst understand me by my signs,  
 And didst in signs again parley with sin;  
 Yea, without stop, didst let thy heart consent,  
 And, consequently, thy rude hand to act  
 The deed, which both our tongues held vile to name.—  
 Out of my sight, and never see me more!  
 My nobles leave me; and my state is brav'd,  
 Even at my gates, with ranks of foreign powers:  
 Nay, in the body of this fleshly land,  
 This kingdom, this confine of blood and breath,  
 Hostility and civil tumult reigns  
 Between my conscience, and my cousin's death.

*Hub.* Arm you against your other enemies,  
 I'll make a peace between your soul and you.  
 Young Arthur is alive: This hand of mine  
 Is yet a maiden and an innocent hand,  
 Not painted with the crimson spots of blood.  
 Within this bosom never enter'd yet  
 The dreadful motion of a murd'rous thought,  
 And you have slander'd nature in my form;  
 Which, howsoever rude exteriorly,  
 Is yet the cover of a fairer mind  
 Than to be butcher of an innocent child.

*K. John.* Doth Arthur live? O, haste thee to the peers,  
 Throw this report on their incensed rage,  
 And make them tame to their obedience!  
 Forgive the comment that my passion made  
 Upon thy feature; for my rage was blind,  
 And foul imaginary eyes of blood  
 Presented thee more hideous than thou art.  
 O, answer not; but to my closet bring  
 The angry lords, with all expedient haste:  
 I conjure thee but slowly; run more fast. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—*The same. Before the castle.**Enter ARTHUR, on the walls.*

*Arth.* The wall is high; and yet will I leap down:—  
 Good ground, be pitiful, and hurt me not!—  
 There's few, or none, do know me; if they did,  
 This ship-boy's semblance hath disguis'd me quite.  
 I am afraid; and yet I'll venture it.  
 If I get down, and do not break my limbs,  
 I'll find a thousand shifts to get away:  
 As good to die, and go, as die, and stay. [*Leaps down.*]  
 O me! my uncle's spirit is in these stones:—  
 Heaven take my soul, and England keep my bones! [*Dies.*]

*Enter PEMBROKE, SALISBURY, and BIGOT.*

*Sal.* Lords, I will meet him at saint Edmund's-  
 Bury:

It is our safety, and we must embrace  
 This gentle offer of the perilous time.

*Pem.* Who brought that letter from the cardinal?

*Sal.* The count Melun, a noble lord of France;  
 Whose private with me, of the Dauphin's love,  
 Is much more general than these lines import.

*Big.* To-morrow morning let us meet him then.

*Sal.* Or, rather then set forward: for 'twill be  
 Two long days' journey, lords, or e'er we meet.

*Enter the Bastard.*

*Bast.* Once more to-day well met, distemper'd lords!  
 The king, by me, requests your presence straight.

*Sal.* The king hath disposess'd himself of us;  
 We will not line his thin bestain'd cloak.



With our pure honours, nor attend the foot  
That leaves the print of blood where-e'er it walks:  
Return, and tell him so, we know the worst.

*Bast.* Whate'er you think, good words, I think, were best.

*Sal.* Our griefs, and not our manners, reason now.

*Bast.* But there is little reason in your grief;  
Therefore, 'twere reason, you had manners now.

*Pem.* Sir, sir, impatience hath his privilege.

*Bast.* 'Tis true; to hurt his master, no man else.

*Sal.* This is the prison: What is he lies here?

[*Seeing ARTHUR.*]

*Pem.* O death, made proud with pure and princely beauty!

The earth had not a hole to hide this deed.

*Sal.* Murder, as hating what himself hath done,  
Doth lay it open, to urge on revenge.

*Big.* Or, when he doom'd this beauty to a grave,  
Found it too precious-princely for a grave.

*Sal.* Sir Richard, what think you? Have you beheld,  
Or have you read, or heard? or could you think?  
Or do you almost think, although you see,  
That you do see? could thought, without this object,  
Form such another? This is the very top,  
The height, the crest, or crest unto the crest,  
Of murder's arms: this is the bloodiest shame,  
The wildest savag'ry, the vilest stroke,  
That ever wall-ey'd wrath, or staring rage,  
Presented to the tears of soft remorse

*Pem.* All murders past do stand excus'd in this:  
And this, so sole, and so unmatchable,  
Shall give a holiness, a purity,  
To the yet-unbegotten sin of time,

And prove a deadly bloodshed but a jest,  
 Exempl'd by this heinous spectacle.

*Bast.* It is a damned and a bloody work;  
 The graceless action of a heavy hand,  
 If that it be the work of any hand.

*Sal.* If that it be the work of any hand?—  
 We had a kind of light, what would ensue:  
 It is the shameful work of Hubert's hand;  
 The practice, and the purpose, of the king:—  
 From whose obedience I forbid my soul,  
 Kneeling before this ruin of sweet life,  
 And breathing to his breathless excellence  
 The incense of a vow, a holy vow;  
 Never to taste the pleasures of the world,  
 Never to be infected with delight,  
 Nor conversant with ease and idleness,  
 Till I have set a glory to this hand,  
 By giving it the worship of revenge.

*Pem. Big.* Our souls religiously confirm thy words.

*Enter HUBERT.*

*Hub.* Lords, I am hot with haste in seeking you:  
 Arthur doth live; the king hath sent for you.

*Sal.* O, he is bold, and blushes not at death:—  
 Avaunt, thou hateful villain, get thee gone!

*Hub.* I am no villain.

*Sal.*

Must I rob the law?

*[Drawing his sword.]*

*Bast.* Your sword is bright, sir; put it up again.

*Sal.* Not till I sheath it in a murderer's skin.

*Hub.* Stand back, lord Salisbury, stand back, I say;  
 By heaven, I think, my sword's as sharp as yours:  
 I would not have you, lord, forget yourself.

Nor tempt the danger of my true defence ;  
Lest I, by marking of your rage, forget  
Your worth, your greatness, and nobility.

*Big.* Out, dunghill! dar'st thou brave a nobleman?

*Hub.* Not for my life: but yet I dare defend  
My innocent life against an emperor.

*Sal.* Thou art a murderer.

*Hub.* Do not prove me so ;  
Yet, I am none: Whose tongue soe'er speaks false,  
Not truly speaks; who speaks not truly, lies.

*Pem.* Cut him to pieces.

*Bast.* Keep the peace, I say.

*Sal.* Stand by, or I shall gall you, Faulconbridge.

*Bast.* Thou wert better gall the devil, Salisbury:  
If thou but frown on me, or stir thy foot,  
Or teach thy hasty spleen to do me shame,  
I'll strike thee dead. Put up thy sword betime;  
Or I'll so maul you and your toasting-iron,  
That you shall think the devil is come from hell.

*Big.* What wilt thou do, renowned Faulconbridge?  
Second a villain, and a murderer?

*Hub.* Lord Bigot, I am none.

*Big.* Who kill'd this prince!

*Hub.* 'Tis not an hour since I left him, well:  
I honour'd him, I lov'd him; and will weep  
My date of life out, for his sweet life's loss.

*Sal.* Trust not those cunning waters of his eyes,  
For villainy is not without such rheum;  
And he, long traded in it, makes it seem  
Like rivers of remorse and innocency.  
Away, with me, all you whose souls abhor  
Th'uncleanly savours of a slaughter-house;  
For I am stifled with this smell of sin.

*Big.* Away, toward Bury, to the Dauphin there!

*Pem.* There, tell the king, he may inquire us out.

[*Exeunt* Lords.

*Bast.* Here's a good world!—Knew you of this fair work?

Beyond the infinite and boundless reach  
Of mercy, if thou didst this deed of death,  
Art thou damn'd, Hubert.

*Hub.* Do but hear me, sir.

*Bast.* Ha! I'll tell thee what;

Thou art damn'd as black—nay, nothing is so black;  
Thou art more deep damn'd than prince Lucifer:  
There is not yet so ugly a fiend of hell  
As thou shalt be, if thou didst kill this child.

*Hub.* Upon my soul,—

*Bast.* If thou didst but consent

To this most cruel act, do but despair,  
And, if thou want'st a cord, the smallest thread  
That ever spider twisted from her womb  
Will serve to strangle thee; a rush will be  
A beam to hang thee on; or would'st thou drown thyself,  
Put but a little water in a spoon,  
And it shall be as all the ocean,  
Enough to stifle such a villain up.—  
I do suspect thee very grievously.

*Hub.* If I in act, consent, or sin of thought  
Be guilty of the stealing that sweet breath  
Which was embounded in this beauteous clay,  
Let hell want pains enough to torture me!  
I left him well.

*Bast.* Go, bear him in thine arms.—

I am amaz'd, methinks; and lose my way  
Among the thorns and dangers of this world.—

How easy dost thou take all England up!  
 From forth this morsel of dead royalty,  
 The life, the right, and truth of all this realm  
 Is fled to heaven; and England now is left  
 To tug and scramble, and to part by th' teeth  
 The unowed interest of proud-swelling state.  
 Now, for the bare-pick'd bone of majesty,  
 Doth dogged war bristle his angry crest,  
 And snarleth in the gentle eyes of peace:  
 Now powers from home, and discontents at home,  
 Meet in one line; and vast confusion waits  
 (As doth a raven on a sick-fallen beast,) .  
 The imminent decay of wrested pomp.  
 Now happy he, whose cloak and cincture can  
 Hold out this tempest. Bear away that child,  
 And follow me with speed; I'll to the king:  
 A thousand businesses are brief in hand,  
 And heaven itself doth frown upon the land. [*Exeunt.*]

---



---

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—*The same. A room in the palace.*

*Enter King JOHN, PANDULPH with the crown, and Attendants.*

*K. John.* Thus have I yielded up into your hand  
 The circle of my glory.

*Pand.*

Take again

[*Giving JOHN the crown.*]

From this my hand, as holding of the pope,  
Your sovereign greatness and authority.

*K. John.* Now keep your holy word: go meet the  
French;

And from his holiness use all your power  
To stop their marches, 'fore we are inflam'd.  
Our discontented counties do revolt;  
Our people quarrel with obedience;  
Swearing allegiance, and the love of soul,  
To stranger blood, to foreign royalty.  
This inundation of mistemper'd humour  
Rests by you only to be qualified.  
Then pause not; for the present time's so sick,  
That present medicine must be minister'd,  
Or overthrow incurable ensues.

*Pand.* It was my breath that blew this tempest up,  
Upon your stubborn usage of the pope:  
But, since you are a gentle convertite,  
My tongue shall hush again this storm of war,  
And make fair weather in your blustering land.  
On this Ascension-day, remember well,  
Upon your oath of service to the pope,  
Go I to make the French lay down their arms. [*Exit.*]

*K. John.* Is this Ascension-day? Did not the prophet  
Say, that, before Ascension-day at noon,  
My crown I should give off? Even so I have:  
I did suppose, it should be on constraint;  
But, heaven be thank'd, it is but voluntary.

*Enter the Bastard.*

*Bast.* All Kent hath yielded; nothing there holds out,  
But Dover castle: London hath receiv'd,  
Like a kind host, the Dauphin and his powers:

Your nobles will not hear you, but are gone  
To offer service to your enemy;  
And wild amazement hurries up and down  
The little number of your doubtful friends.

*K. John.* Would not my lords return to me again,  
After they heard young Arthur was alive?

*Bast.* They found him dead, and cast into the streets;  
An empty casket, where the jewel of life  
By some damn'd hand was robb'd and ta'en away.

*K. John.* That villain Hubert told me, he did live.

*Bast.* So, on my soul, he did, for aught he knew.

But wherefore do you droop? why look you sad?

Be great in act, as you have been in thought;

Let not the world see fear, and sad distrust,

Govern the motion of a kingly eye:

Be stirring as the time; be fire with fire;

Threaten the threat'ner, and outface the brow

Of bragging horror: so shall inferior eyes,

That borrow their behaviours from the great,

Grow great by your example, and put on

The dauntless spirit of resolution.

Away; and glisten like the god of war,

When he intendeth to become the field:

Show boldness, and aspiring confidence.

What, shall they seek the lion in his den,

And fright him there? and make him tremble there?

O, let it not be said!—Forage, and run

To meet displeasure further from the doors;

And grapple with him, ere he come so nigh.

*K. John.* The legate of the pope hath been with me,

And I have made a happy peace with him;

And he hath promis'd to dismiss the powers

Led by the Dauphin.

*Bast.* O inglorious league!  
 Shall we, upon the footing of our land,  
 Send fair-play orders, and make compromise,  
 Insinuation, parley, and base truce,  
 To arms invasive? shall a beardless boy,  
 A cocker'd silken wanton brave our fields,  
 And flesh his spirit in a warlike soil,  
 Mocking the air with colours idly spread,  
 And find no check? Let us, my liege, to arms:  
 Perchance, the cardinal cannot make your peace;  
 Or if he do, let it at least be said,  
 They saw we had a purpose of defence.

*K. John.* Have thou the ordering of this present time.

*Bast.* Away then, with good courage; yet, I know,  
 Our party may well meet a prouder foe. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—*A plain, near St. Edmund's-Bury.*

*Ester, in arms, LEWIS, SALISBURY, MELUN, PEMBROKE,  
 BIGOT, and Soldiers.*

*Lew.* My lord Melun, let this be copied out,  
 And keep it safe for our remembrance:  
 Return the precedent to these lords again;  
 That, having our fair order written down,  
 Both they, and we, perusing o'er these notes,  
 May know wherefore we took the sacrament,  
 And keep our faiths firm and inviolable.

*Sal.* Upon our sides it never shall be broken.  
 And, noble Dauphin, albeit we swear  
 A voluntary zeal, and unurg'd faith,  
 To your proceedings; yet, believe me, prince,  
 I am not glad that such a sore of time  
 Should seek a plaster by contemn'd revolt,



And heal the inveterate canker of one wound,  
 By making many: O, it grieves my soul,  
 That I must draw this metal from my side  
 To be a widow-maker; O, and there,  
 Where honourable rescue, and defence,  
 Cries out upon the name of Salisbury:  
 But such is the infection of the time,  
 That, for the health and physick of our right,  
 We cannot deal but with the very hand  
 Of stern injustice and confused wrong.—  
 And is't not pity, O my grieved friends!  
 That we, the sons and children of this isle,  
 Were born to see so sad an hour as this;  
 Wherein we step after a stranger march  
 Upon her gentle bosom, and fill up  
 Her enemies' ranks, (I must withdraw and weep  
 Upon the spot of this enforced cause,)  
 To grace the gentry of a land remote,  
 And follow unacquainted colours here?  
 What, here?—O nation, that thou could'st remove!  
 That Neptune's arms, who clippeth thee about,  
 Would bear thee from the knowledge of thyself,  
 And grapple thee unto a pagan shore;  
 Where these two Christian armies might combine  
 The blood of malice in a vein of league,  
 And not to spend it so unneighbourly!

*Lew.* A noble temper dost thou show in this;  
 And great affections, wrestling in thy bosom,  
 Do make an earthquake of nobility.  
 O, what a noble combat hast thou fought,  
 Between compulsion and a brave respect!  
 Let me wipe off this honourable dew,  
 • That silverly doth progress on thy cheeks:

My heart hath melted at a lady's tears,  
 Being an ordinary inundation;  
 But this effusion of such manly drops,  
 This shower, blown up by tempest of the soul,  
 Startles mine eyes, and makes me more amaz'd  
 Than had I seen the vaulty top of heaven  
 Figur'd quite o'er with burning meteors.  
 Lift up thy brow, renown'd Salisbury,  
 And with a great heart heave away this storm:  
 Commend these waters to those baby eyes,  
 That never saw the giant world enrag'd;  
 Nor met with fortune other than at feasts,  
 Full warm of blood, of mirth, of gossiping.  
 Come, come; for thou shalt thrust thy hand as  
 deep

Into the purse of rich prosperity,  
 As Lewis himself:—so, nobles, shall you all,  
 That knit your sinews to the strength of mine.

*Enter PANDULPH, attended.*

And even there, methinks, an angel spake:  
 Look, where the holy legate comes apace,  
 To give us warrant from the hand of heaven;  
 And on our actions set the name of right,  
 With holy breath.

*Pand.* Hail, noble prince of France!  
 The next is this,—king John hath reconcil'd  
 Himself to Rome; his spirit is come in,  
 That so stood out against the holy church,  
 The great metropolis and see of Rome:  
 Therefore thy threat'ning colours now wind up,  
 And tame the savage spirit of wild war;  
 That, like a lion foster'd up at hand,

It may lie gently at the foot of peace,  
And be no further harmful than in show.

*Lev.* Your grace shall pardon me, I will not back;  
I am too high-born to be propertied,  
To be a secondary at control,  
Or useful serving-man, and instrument,  
To any sovereign state throughout the world.  
Your breath first kindled the dead coal of wars  
Between this chástis'd kingdom and myself,  
And brought in matter that should feed this fire;  
And now 'tis far too huge to be blown out  
With that same weak wind which enkindled it.  
You taught me how to know the face of right,  
Acquainted me with interest to this land,  
Yea, thrust this enterprize into my heart;  
And come you now to tell me, John hath made  
His peace with Rome? What is that peace to me?  
I, by the honour of my marriage-bed,  
After young Arthur, claim this land for mine;  
And, now it is half-conquer'd, must I back,  
Because that John hath made his peace with Rome?  
Am I Rome's slave? What penny hath Rome borne,  
What men provided, what munition sent,  
To underprop this action? is't not I,  
That undergo this charge? who else but I,  
And such as to my claim are liable,  
Sweat in this business, and maintain this war?  
Have I not heard these islanders shout out,  
*Five le roy!* as I have bank'd their towns?  
Have I not here the best cards for the game,  
To win this easy match play'd for a crown?  
And shall I now give o'er the yielded set?  
No, on my soul, it never shall be said.

*Pand.* You look but on the outside of this work.

*Lew.* Outside or inside, I will not return  
Till my attempt so much be glorified  
As to my ample hope was promised  
Before I drew this gallant head of war,  
And cull'd these fiery spirits from the world,  
To outlook conquest, and to win renown  
Even in the jaws of danger and of death.—

[*Trumpet sounds.*]

What lusty trumpet thus doth summon us?

*Enter the Bastard, attended.*

*Bast.* According to the fair play of the world,  
Let me have audience; I am sent to speak:—  
My holy lord of Milan, from the king  
I come, to learn how you have dealt for him;  
And, as you answer, I do know the scope  
And warrant limited unto my tongue.

*Pand.* The Dauphin is too wilful-opposite,  
And will not temporize with my entreaties;  
He flatly says, he'll not lay down his arms.

*Bast.* By all the blood that ever fury breath'd,  
The youth says well:—Now hear our English king;  
For thus his royalty doth speak in me.  
He is prepar'd; and reason too, he should:  
This apish and unmannerly approach,  
This harness'd masque, and unadvised revel,  
This unhair'd sauciness, and boyish troops,  
The king doth smile at; and is well prepar'd  
To whip this dwarfish war, these pigmy arms,  
From out the circle of his territories.  
That hand, which had the strength, even at your door,  
To cudgel you, and make you take the hatch;

To dive, like buckets, in concealed wells;  
 To crouch in litter of your stable planks;  
 To lie, like pawns, lock'd up in chests and trunks;  
 To hug with swine; to seek sweet safety out  
 In vaults and prisons; and to thrill, and shake,  
 Even at the crying of your nation's crow,  
 Thinking his voice an armed Englishman;—  
 Shall that victorious hand be feebled here,  
 That in your chambers gave you chastisement?  
 No: Know, the gallant monarch is in arms;  
 And like an eagle o'er his airy towers,  
 To souse annoyance that comes near his nest.—  
 And you degenerate, you ingrate revolts,  
 You bloody Neroes, ripping up the womb  
 Of your dear mother England, blush for shame:  
 For your own ladies, and pale-visag'd maids,  
 Like Amazons, come tripping after drums;  
 Their thimbles into armed gauntlets change,  
 Their needs to lances, and their gentle hearts  
 To fierce and bloody inclination.

*Lew.* There end thy brave, and turn thy face in peace;  
 We grant, thou canst outscold us: fare thee well;  
 We hold our time too precious to be spent  
 With such a brabblor.

*Pand.* Give me leave to speak.

*Bast.* No, I will speak.

*Lew.* We will attend to neither:—  
 Strike up the drums; and let the tongue of war  
 Plead for our interest, and our being here.

*Bast.* Indeed, your drums, being beaten, will cry out;  
 And so shall you, being beaten: Do but start  
 An echo with the clamour of thy drum,  
 And even at hand a drum is ready brac'd,

That shall reverberate all as loud as thine;  
 Sound but another, and another shall,  
 As loud as thine, rattle the welkin's ear,  
 And mock the deep-mouth'd thunder: for at hand  
 (Not trusting to this halting legate here,  
 Whom he hath us'd rather for sport than need,)  
 Is warlike John; and in his forehead sits  
 A bare-ribb'd death, whose office is this day  
 To feast upon whole thousands of the French.

*Lew.* Strike up our drums, to find this danger out.

*Bast.* And thou shalt find it, Dauphin, do not doubt.

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE III.—*The same. A field of, battle.*

*Alarums. Enter King JOHN and HUBERT.*

*K. John.* How goes the day with us? O, tell me,  
 Hubert.

*Hub.* Badly, I fear: How fares your majesty?

*K. John.* This fever, that hath troubled me so long,  
 Lies heavy on me; O, my heart is sick!

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My lord, your valiant kinsman, Faulconbridge,  
 Desires your majesty to leave the field;  
 And send him word by me, which way you go.

*K. John.* Tell him, toward Swinstead, to the abbey  
 there.

*Mess.* Be of good comfort; for the great supply,  
 That was expected by the Dauphin here,  
 Are wreck'd three nights ago on Goodwin sands.  
 This news was brought to Richard but even now:  
 The French fight coldly, and retire themselves.

*K. John.* Ah me! this tyrant fever burns me up,  
 And will not let me welcome this good news.—  
 Set on toward Swinstead: to my litter straight;  
 Weakness possesseth me, and I am faint. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*The same. Another part of the same.*

*Enter SALISBURY, PEMBROKE, BIGOT, and others.*

*Sal.* I did not think the king so stor'd with friends.

*Pem.* Up once again; put spirit in the French;  
 If they miscarry, we miscarry too.

*Sal.* That misbegotten devil, Faulconbridge,  
 In spite of spite, alone upholds the day.

*Pem.* They say, king John, sore sick, hath left the  
 field.

*Enter MELUN wounded, and led by Soldiers.*

*Mel.* Lead me to the revolts of England here.

*Sal.* When we were happy, we had other names.

*Pem.* It is the count Melun.

*Sal.* Wounded to death.

*Mel.* Fly, noble English, you are bought and sold;  
 Unthread the rude eye of rebellion,  
 And welcome home again discarded faith.  
 Seek out king John, and fall before his feet;  
 For, if the French be lords of this loud day,  
 He means to recompense the pains you take,  
 By cutting off your heads: Thus hath he sworn,  
 And I with him, and many more with me,  
 Upon the altar at Saint Edmund's-Bury;  
 Even on that altar, where we swore to you  
 Dear amity and everlasting love.

*Sal.* May this be possible? may this be true?

*Mel.* Have I not hideous death within my view,  
 Retaining but a quantity of life;  
 Which bleeds away, even as a form of wax  
 Resolveth from his figure 'gainst the fire?  
 What in the world should make me now deceive,  
 Since I must lose the use of all deceit?  
 Why should I then be false; since it is true  
 That I must die here, and live hence by truth?  
 I say again, if Lewis do win the day,  
 He is forsworn, if e'er those eyes of yours  
 Behold another day break in the east:  
 But even this night,—whose black contagious breath  
 Already smokes about the burning crest  
 Of the old, feeble, and day-wearied sun,—  
 Even this ill night, your breathing shall expire;  
 Paying the fine of rated treachery,  
 Even with a treacherous fine of all your lives,  
 If Lewis by your assistance win the day.  
 Commend me to one Hubert, with your king;  
 The love of him,—and this respect besides,  
 For that my grandsire was an Englishman,—  
 Awakes my conscience to confess all this.  
 In lieu whereof, I pray you, bear me hence  
 From forth the noise and rumour of the field;  
 Where I may think the remnant of my thoughts  
 In peace, and part this body and my soul  
 With contemplation and devout desires.

*Sal.* We do believe thee,—And beshrew my soul  
 But I do love the favour and the form  
 Of this most fair occasion, by the which  
 We will untread the steps of damned flight;  
 And, like a bated and retired flood,  
 Leaving our rankness and irregular course,



Stoop low within those bounds we have o'erlook'd,  
 And calmly run on in obedience,  
 Even to our ocean, to our great king John.—  
 My arm shall give thee help to bear thee hence;  
 For I do see the cruel pangs of death  
 Right in thine eye.—Away, my friends! New fight;  
 And happy newness, that intends old right.

[*Exeunt, leading off MELUN.*]

SCENE V.—*The same. The French camp.*

*Enter LEWIS and his train.*

*Lew.* The sun of heaven, methought, was loath to  
 set;

But stay'd, and made the western welkin blush,  
 When the English measur'd backward their own ground,  
 In faint retire: O, bravely came we off,  
 When with a volley of our needless shot,  
 After such bloody toil, we bid good night;  
 And wound our tatter'd colours clearly up,  
 Last in the field, and almost lords of it!

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Where is my prince, the Dauphin?

*Lew.* Here:—What news?

*Mess.* The count Melun is slain; the English lords,  
 By his persuasion, are again fallen off:

And your supply, which you have wish'd so long,  
 Are cast away, and sunk, on Goodwin sands.

*Lew.* Ah, foul shrewd news!—Beshrew thy very  
 heart!

I did not think to be so sad to-night,  
 As this hath made me.—Who was he, that said,

King John did fly, an hour or two before  
The stumbling night did part our weary powers?

*Mess.* Whoever spoke it, it is true, my lord.

*Law.* Well; keep good quarter, and good care to-night;

The day shall not be up so soon as I,  
To try the fair adventure of to-morrow. [Exeunt.

SCENE VI.—*An open place in the neighbourhood of Swinstead-Abbey.*

*Enter the Bastard and HUBERT, meeting.*

*Hub.* Who's there? speak, ho! speak quickly, or I shoot.

*Bast.* A friend:—What art thou?

*Hub.* Of the part of England.

*Bast.* Whither dost thou go?

*Hub.* What's that to thee? Why may not I demand  
Of thine affairs, as well as thou of mine?

*Bast.* Hubert, I think.

*Hub.* Thou hast a perfect thought:  
I will, upon all hazards, well believe  
Thou art my friend, that know'st my tongue so well:  
Who art thou?

*Bast.* Who thou wilt: an if thou please,  
Thou may'st befriend me so much, as to think  
I come one way of the Plantagenets.

*Hub.* Unkind remembrance! thou, and eyeless night,  
Have done me shame:—Brave soldier, pardon me,  
That any accent, breaking from thy tongue,  
Should 'scape the true acquaintance of mine ear.

*Bast.* Come, come; sans compliment, what news  
abroad?

*Hub.* Why, here walk I, in the black brow of night,  
To find you out.

*Bast.* Brief, then; and what's the news?

*Hub.* O, my sweet sir, news fitting to the night,  
Black, fearful, comfortless, and horrible.

*Bast.* Show me the very wound of this ill news;  
I am no woman, I'll not swoon at it.

*Hub.* The king, I fear, is poison'd by a monk:  
I left him almost speechless, and broke out  
To acquaint you with this evil; that you might  
The better arm you to the sudden time,  
Than if you had at leisure known of this.

*Bast.* How did he take it? who did taste to him?

*Hub.* A monk, I tell you; a resolved villain,  
Whose bowels suddenly burst out: the king  
Yet speaks, and, peradventure, may recover.

*Bast.* Who didst thou leave to tend his majesty?

*Hub.* Why, know you not? the lords are all come  
back,

And brought prince Henry in their company;  
At whose request the king hath pardon'd them,  
And they are all about his majesty.

*Bast.* Withhold thine indignation, mighty heaven,  
And tempt us not to bear above our power!—  
I'll tell thee, Hubert, half my power this night,  
Passing these flats, are taken by the tide,  
These Lincoln washes have devoured them;  
Myself, well-mounted, hardly have escap'd.  
Away, before! conduct me to the king;  
I doubt, he will be dead, or ere I come.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE VII.—*The orchard of Swinstead-Abbey.*

*Enter Prince HENRY, SALISBURY, and BIGOT.*

*P. Hen.* It is too late; the life of all his blood  
Is touch'd corruptibly; and his pure brain  
(Which some suppose the soul's frail dwelling-house,)  
Doth, by the idle comments that it makes,  
Foretell the ending of mortality.

*Enter PEMBROKE.*

*Pem.* His highness yet doth speak; and holds belief,  
That, being brought into the open air,  
It would allay the burning quality  
Of that fell poison which assaileth him.

*P. Hen.* Let him be brought into the orchard here.—  
Doth he still rage? [*Exit BIGOT.*]

*Pem.* He is more patient  
Than when you left him; even now he sung.

*P. Hen.* O vanity of sickness! fierce extremes,  
In their continuance, will not feel themselves.  
Death, haivng prey'd upon the outward parts,  
Leaves them insensible; and his siege is now  
Against the mind, the which he pricks and wounds  
With many legions of strange fantasies;  
Which, in their throng and press to that last hold,  
Confound themselves. 'Tis strange, that death should  
sing.—

I am the cygnet to this pale faint swan,  
Who chants a doleful hymn to his own death;  
And, from the organ-pipe of frailty, sings  
His soul and body to their lasting rest.

*Sal.* Be of good comfort, prince; for you are born

To set a form upon that indigest  
Which he hath left so shapeless and so rude.

*Re-enter BIGOT and Attendants, who bring in King JOHN  
in a chair.*

*K. John.* Ay, marry, now my soul hath elbow-room;  
It would not out at windows, nor at doors.  
There is so hot a summer in my bosom,  
That all my bowels crumble up to dust:  
I am a scribbled form, drawn with a pen  
Upon a parchment; and against this fire  
Do I shrink up.

*P. Hen.* How fares your majesty?

*K. John.* Poison'd,—ill-fare;—dead, forsook, cast off:  
And none of you will bid the winter come,  
To thrust his icy fingers in my maw;  
Nor let my kingdom's rivers take their course  
Through my burn'd bosom; nor entreat the north  
To make his bleak winds kiss my parched lips,  
And comfort me with cold:—I do not ask you much,  
I beg cold comfort; and you are so strait,  
And so ingrateful, you deny me that.

*P. Hen.* O, that there were some virtue in my tears,  
That might relieve you!

*K. John.* The salt in them is hot.—  
Within me is a hell; and there the poison  
Is, as a fiend, confin'd to tyrannize  
On unreprieveable condemned blood.

*Enter the Bastard.*

*Bast.* O, I am scalded with my violent motion,  
And spleen of speed to see your majesty.

*K. John.* O cousin, thou art come to set mine eye:

The tackle of my heart is crack'd and burn'd ;  
 And all the shrouds, wherewith my life should sail,  
 Are turned to one thread, one little hair :  
 My heart hath one poor string to stay it by,  
 Which holds but till thy news be uttered ;  
 And then all this thou see'st, is but a clod,  
 And module of confounded royalty.

*Bast.* The Dauphin is preparing hitherward ;  
 Where, heaven he knows, how we shall answer him :  
 For, in a night, the best part of my power,  
 As I upon advantage did remove,  
 Were in the washes, all unwarily,  
 Devoured by the unexpected flood. [The King dies.

*Sal.* You breathe these dead news in as dead an ear.—  
 My liege! my lord!—But now a king,—now thus.

*P. Hen.* Even so must I run on, and even so stop.  
 What surety of the world, what hope, what stay,  
 When this was now a king, and now is clay!

*Bast.* Art thou gone so? I do but stay behind,  
 To do the office for thee of revenge ;  
 And then my soul shall wait on thee to heaven,  
 As it on earth hath been thy servant still.—  
 Now, now, you stars, that move in your right spheres,  
 Where be your powers? Show now your mended faiths ;  
 And instantly return with me again,  
 To push destruction, and perpetual shame,  
 Out of the weak door of our fainting land :  
 Straight let us seek, or straight we shall be sought ;  
 The Dauphin rages at our very heels.

*Sal.* It seems, you know not then so much as we ;  
 The cardinal Pandulph is within at rest,  
 Who half an hour since came from the Dauphin ;  
 And brings from him such offers of our peace

As we with honour and respect may take,  
With purpose presently to leave this war.

*Bast.* He will the rather do it, when he sees  
Ourselves well sinewed to our defence.

*Sal.* Nay, it is in a manner done already;  
For many carriages he hath despatch'd  
To the sea-side, and put his cause and quarrel  
To the disposing of the cardinal:  
With whom yourself, myself, and other lords,  
If you think meet, this afternoon will post  
To consummate this business happily.

*Bast.* Let it be so:—And you, my noble prince,  
With other princes that may best be spar'd,  
Shall wait upon your father's funeral.

*P. Hen.* At Worcester must his body be interr'd;  
For so he will'd it.

*Bast.* Thither shall it then.  
And happily may your sweet self put on  
The lineal state and glory of the land!  
To whom, with all submission, on my knee,  
I do bequeath my faithful services  
And true subjection everlastingly.

*Sal.* And the like tender of our love we make,  
To rest without a spot for evermore.

*P. Hen.* I have a kind soul, that would give you  
thanks,

And knows not how to do it, but with tears.

*Bast.* O, let us pay the time but needful woe,  
Since it hath been beforehand with our griefs.—  
This England never did, (nor never shall,)  
Lie at the proud foot of a conqueror,  
But when it first did help to wound itself.

Now these her princes are come home again,  
Come the three corners of the world in arms,  
And we shall shock them: Nought shall make us rue,  
If England to itself do rest but true. [Exeunt

END OF VOL. V.



## ANNOTATIONS

ON

## K I N G   J O H N.

---

### ACT I.

**LINE 30.** *Be thou, as lightning —*] The simile does not suit well: the lightning indeed appears before the thunder is heard, but the lightning is destructive, and the thunder innocent. **JOHNSON.**

Line 58. ——— *and Philip, his bastard brother.*] Holinshed says, that Richard I. had a natural son named Philip, who killed the viscount De Limoges to revenge the death of his father. **STEEVENS.**

In expanding the character of the Bastard, Shakspeare seems to have proceeded on the following slight hint in the original play:

“ Next them, a bastard of the king's deceas'd,  
“ A hardie wild-head, rough, and venturous.”

**MALONE.**

Line 98. *He hath a trick of Cœur-de-lion's face.*] Our author often uses this phrase, and generally in the sense of a peculiar air or cast of countenance or feature. **MALONE.**

Line 140. *This concludes.*] This is a decisive argument. As your father, if he liked him, could not have been forced to resign him, so, not liking him, he is not at liberty to reject him. **JOHNSON.**

Line 155. ——— *my face so thin,*  
*That in mine ear I durst not stick a rose*  
*Lest men should say, Look where three-farthings goes?]*

The illusion is to a silver coin of *three-farthings* in the reign of Elizabeth, which had the impression of a *rose* on one side, and being extremely thin was liable to be cracked; hence the humour of the passage.

Line 188. *Madam, by chance, but not by truth; what though?]*  
 I am your grandson, madam, by chance, but not by *honesty*  
 —what then? JOHNSON.

Line 190. *Something about, a little from the right, &c.]*  
 This speech, composed of allusive and proverbial sentences, is obscure. *I am*, says the sprightly knight, *your grandson*, a little *irregularly*, but every man cannot get what he wishes the legal way. He that *dares not go* about his designs *by day*, must *make his motions in the night*; he, to whom the door is shut, must climb *the window*, or leap *the hatch*. This, however, shall not depress me; for the world never enquires how any man got what he is known to possess, but allows that *to have is to have* however it was *caught*, and that he *who wins, shot well*, whatever was his skill, whether the arrow fell *near the mark*, or *far off it*. JOHNSON.

Line 191. *In at the window, &c.]* These expressions mean, to be *born out of wedlock*. STEEVENS.

Line 210. ——— *Now your traveller,]* It is said in *All's well that ends well*, that *a traveller is a good thing after dinner*. In that age of newly excited curiosity, one of the entertainments at great tables seems to have been the discourse of a traveller. JOHNSON.

Line 214. *My picked man of countries:]* The word *picked* may not refer to the beard, but to the *shoes*, which were once worn of an immoderate length. STEEVENS.

Line 240. *To blow a horn —]* He means, that a woman who travelled about like a post was likely to *horn her husband*. JOHNSON.

Line 253. — *James Gurney.*] Our author found this name in perusing the history of King John, who, not long before his victory at Mirabeau, over the French, headed by young Arthur, seized the lands and castle of *Hugh Gorney*, near Butevant, in Normany.

MALONE.

Line 260. Colbrand—] *Colbrand* was a Danish giant, whom Guy of Warwick discomfited in the presence of king Athelstan. The combat is very pompously described by Drayton, in his *Polyolbion*.

JOHNSON.

Line 257. *There's toys abroad, &c.*] i. e. *idle reports*.

STEVENS.

Line 272. *Knight, knight, good mother* — *Basilico-like:*] Falconbridge's words here carry a concealed piece of satire on a stupid drama of that age, printed in 1599, and called *Soliman and Perseda*. In this piece there is a character of a bragging cowardly knight, called *Basilico*. His pretensions to valour is so blown and seen through, that Piston, a buffoon-servant in the play, jumps upon his back, and will not disengage him, till he makes *Basilico* swear upon his dudgeon dagger to the contents, and in the terms he dictates to him

THEOBALD.

## ACT II.

Line 3. *Richard, that robb'd, &c.*] So Rastal in his *Chronicle*. It is sayd that a lyon was put to kyng Richard, beyng in prison, to have devoured him, and when the lyon was gapyng he put his arme in his mouth, and pulled the lyon by the harte so hard that he slewe the lyon, and therefore some say he is called Rycharde Cure de Lyon; but some say he is called Cure de Lyon, because of his boldness and hardy stomake.

DR. GREY.

Line 24. — *that pale, that white-fac'd shore.*] England is supposed to be called Albion from the *white rocks* facing France. JOHNSON.

Line 36. *To make a more requital, &c.*] I believe it has been already observed, that *more* signified, in our author's time, *greater*. STEEVENS.

Line 148. *One that will play the devil, sir, with you, An a' may catch your hide and you alone.*] The ground of the quarrel of the Bastard to Austria is no where specified in the play. But the story is, that Austria, who killed king Richard Cœur-de-lion, wore, as the spoil of that prince, a lion's *hide*, which had belonged to him. This circumstance renders the anger of the Bastard very natural, and ought not to have been omitted. POPE.

Line 208. ————— *plagu'd for her,*  
*And with her plague, her sin ; his injury*  
*Her injury,—the beadle to her sin ;]*

I point this passage thus :

————— *plagu'd for her*  
*And with her.—Plague her son ! his injury*  
*Her injury, the beadle to her sin.*

That is ; instead of inflicting vengeance on this innocent and remote descendant, *punish her son*, her immediate offspring : then the affliction will fall where it is deserved ; *his injury* will be *her injury*, and the misery of her *sin* ; her son will be a *beadle*, or chastiser, to her *crimes*, which are now *all punished in the person of this child*. JOHNSON.

Line 222. *It ill beseems this presence, to cry aim*  
*To these ill-tuned repetitions.*] Dr. Warburton has well observed on one of the former plays, that to *cry aim* is to *encourage*. I once thought it was borrowed from archery ; and that *aim !* having been the word of command, as we now say *present !* to *cry aim* had been to *incite notice*, or raise *attention*. But I rather think, that the old word of

applause was *J'aime, love it*, and that to applaud was to cry *J'aime*, which the English, not easily pronouncing *Je*, sunk into *aime* or *aim*. Our exclamations of applause are still borrowed, as *bravo* and *encore*. JOHNSON.

Line 354. *Rejoice, ye men of Angiers, &c.*] The English herald falls somewhat below his antagonist. *Silver armour gilt with blood* is a poor image. Yet our author has it again in *Macbeth*,

————— “ Here lay Duncan,  
“ His silver skin lac'd with his golden blood.”

JOHNSON.

Line 364. *And, like a jolly troop of huntsmen, &c.*] It was, I think, one of the savage practices of the chase, for all to stain their hands in the blood of the deer, as a trophy.

JOHNSON.

Line 543. *Lest zeal, now melted, &c.*] We have here a very unusual, and, I think, not very just image of *zeal*, which, in its highest degree, is represented by others as a *flame*, but by Shakspeare as a *frost*. To *repress zeal*, in the language of others, is to *cool*, in Shakspeare's to *melt it*; when it exerts its utmost power it is commonly said to *flame*, but by Shakspeare to be *congealed*. JOHNSON.

### ACT III.

Line 15. *For I am sick, and capable of fears;*] i. e. I am tremblingly alive to apprehension. MALONE.

Line 78. *To me, and to the state of my great grief,  
Lest kings assemble;*] In *Much Ado about Nothing*, the father of Hero, depressed by her disgrace, declares himself so subdued by grief that a *thread may lead him*. How is it that grief in Leonato and lady Constance produces effects directly opposite, and yet both agreeable to nature? Sorrow

softens the mind while it is yet warmed by hope, but hardens it when it is congealed by despair. Distress, while there remains any prospect of relief, is weak and flexible, but when no succour remains, is fearless and stubborn; angry alike at those that injure, and at those that do not help; careless to please where nothing can be gained, and fearless to offend when there is nothing further to be dreaded. Such was this writer's knowledge of the passions.

JOHNSON.

Line 112. *You came in arms to spill mine enemies' blood, But now in arms you strengthen it with yours.*] I am afraid here is a clinch intended; *You came in war to destroy my enemies, but now you strengthen them in embraces.*

JOHNSON.

Line 143. *And hang a calf's-skin on those recreant limbs.*] When fools were kept for diversion in great families, they were distinguished by a *calf's-skin coat*, which had the buttons down the back; and this they wore that they might be known for fools, and escape the resentment of those whom they provoked with their waggaries.

HAWKINS.

Line 165. *What earthly name to interrogatories,*] This must have been at the time when it was written, in our struggles with popery, a very captivating scene.

So many passages remain in which Shakspeare evidently takes his advantage of the facts then recent, and of the passions then in motion, that I cannot but suspect that time has obscured much of his art, and that many allusions yet remain undi covered, which perhaps may be gradually retrieved by succeeding commentators.

JOHNSON.

Line 198. *That takes away by any secret course Thy hateful life.*] This may allude to the bull published against queen Elizabeth. Or we may suppose, since we have no proof that this play appeared in its present state before the reign of king James, that it was exhib-

bited soon after the popish plot. I have seen a Spanish book in which Garnet, Faux, and their accomplices are registered as saints.

JOHNSON.

Line 233. *Is, purchase of a heavy curse from Rome,*] It is a political maxim, that *kingdoms are never married*. Lewis, upon the wedding, is for making war upon his new relations.

JOHNSON.

Line 322. *But thou hast sworn against religion, &c.*] The sense, after I had considered it, appeared to me only this: *In swearing by religion against religion, to which thou hast already sworn, thou makest an oath the security of thy faith against an oath already taken*. I will give, says he, a rule for conscience in these cases. Thou mayst be in doubt about the matter of an oath; *when thou swearest thou mayst not be always sure to swear rightly*, but let this be thy settled principle, *swear only not to be forsworn*; let not the latter oaths be at variance with the former.

*Truth*, through this whole speech, means rectitude of conduct.

JOHNSON.

Line 406. *Some airy devil* —] We must read, *Some fiery devil*, if we will have the *cause* equal to the *effect*.

WARBURTON.

There is no end of such alterations; every page of a vehement and negligent writer will afford opportunities for changes of terms, if mere propriety will justify them.

JOHNSON.

Shakspeare here probably alludes to the distinctions and divisions of some of the demonologists, so much read and regarded in his time. They distributed the devils into different tribes and classes, each of which had its peculiar properties, attributes, &c.

These are described at length in *Burton's Anatomie of Melancholy*, part i. sect. 2. p. 45. 1632.

PERCY.

Line 431. *Bell, book, and candle* —] In an account of

the Romish curse given by Dr. Grey, it appears that three candles were extinguished, one by one, in different parts of the execration. JOHNSON.

Line 498. *Remember.*] This is one of the scenes to which may be promised a lasting commendation. Art could add little to its perfection, and time itself can take nothing from its beauties. STEVENS.

Line 505. — Armado —] *Armado* is a Spanish word signifying a *fleet of war*. The *armada* in 1588 was called so by way of distinction. STEVENS.

Line 543. *Misery's love, &c.*] Thou, death, who art courted by *Misery* to come to his releaf, O come to me.

MALONE.

Line 552. — modern *invocation.*] It is hard to say what Shakspeare means by *modern*: it is not opposed to *ancient*. In *All's well that ends well*, speaking of a girl in contempt, he uses this word, *her modern grace*. It apparently means something *slight* and *inconsiderable*. JOHNSON.

Line 571. *Bind up those tresses:*] It was necessary that Constance should be interrupted, because a passion so violent cannot be borne long. I wish the following speeches had been equally happy; but they only serve to show, how difficult it is to maintain the pathetic long. JOHNSON.

Line 613. — *had you such a loss as I,*

*I could give better comfort* —] This is a sentiment which great sorrow always dictates. Whoever cannot help himself casts his eyes on others for assistance, and often mistakes their inability for coldness. JOHNSON.

Line 621. *There's nothing in this, &c.*] The young prince feels his defeat with more sensibility than his father. Shame operates most strongly in the earlier years; and when can disgrace be less welcome than when a man is going to his bride? JOHNSON.



## ACT IV.

*Northampton.*] Mr. Malone has observed, that Shakspeare deviated from historical fact in bringing Arthur to England; this young prince was first confined at Falaise, and afterwards at Rouen in Normandy, where he was put to death.

Line 123. ——— *The fire is dead with grief, &c.*] The sense is: *the fire*, being created not to hurt but to comfort, is dead with grief for finding itself used in acts of cruelty, which, being innocent, I have not deserved. JOHN SON.

Line 219. ——— *good exercise?*] In the middle ages the whole education of princes and noble youths consisted in martial exercises, &c. These could not be easily had in a prison, where mental improvements might have been afforded as well as any where else; but this sort of education never entered into the thoughts of our active, warlike, but illiterate nobility. PERCY.

Line 389. *It is the curse of kings, &c.*] This plainly hints at Davidson's case, in the affair of Mary queen of Scots, and so must have been inserted long after the first representation. WARBURTON.

It is extremely probable that our author meant to pay his court to Elizabeth for this covert apology for her conduct to Mary. The queen of Scots was beheaded in 1587, some years, I believe, before he had produced any play on the stage. MALONE.

Line 413. *Hadst thou but shook thy head, &c.*] There are many touches of nature in this conference of John with Hubert. A man engaged in wickedness would keep the profit to himself, and transfer the guilt to his accomplice. These reproaches vented against Hubert are not the words of art or policy, but the eruptions of a mind swelling with

a consciousness of crime, and desirous of discharging its misery on another.

This account of the timidity of guilt is drawn *ab ipsis recessibus mentis*, from the intimate knowledge of mankind, particularly that line in which he says, that *to have bid him tell his tale* in express words, would have *struck him dumb*; nothing is more certain than that bad men use all the arts of fallacy upon themselves, palliate their actions to their own minds by gentle terms, and hide themselves from their own detection in ambiguities and subterfuges. JOHNSON.

Line 487. ——— reason now.] *To reason*, in Shakspeare, is not so often to *argue*, as to *talk*. JOHNSON.

Line 529. ——— *a holy vow*;

*Never to taste the pleasures of the world.*] This is a copy of the vows made in the ages of superstition and chivalry. JOHNSON.

Line 533. *Till I have set a glory to this hand,*

*By giving it the worship of revenge.*] The worship is the *dignity*, the *honour*. We still say *worshipful of magistrates*. JOHNSON.

Line 543. *Your sword is bright, sir; put it up again.*] i. e. lest it lose its brightness. MALONE.

Line 557. *Do not prove me so;*

*Yet, I am none;*] Do not make me a murderer by compelling me to kill you; I am *hitherto* not a murderer, JOHNSON.

Line 595. *There is not yet, &c.*] I remember once to have met with an old book, printed in the time of Henry VIII. (which Shakspeare possibly might have seen) where we are told that the deformity of the condemned in the other world is exactly proportioned to the degrees of their guilt. The author of it observes how difficult it would be, on this account, to distinguish between Belzebub and Judas Iscariot. STEEVENS.

## ACT V.

Line 88. *Away then, with good courage; yet, I know,  
Our party may well meet a prouder foe.*] Faulconbridge means, for all their boasting I know very well that our party is able to cope with one yet prouder and more confident of its strength than theirs. STEEVENS.

Line 124. — *clippeth thee about,*] *To clip* is to embrace.

Line 134. *Between compulsion and a brave respect!*] This *compulsion* was the necessity of a reformation in the state; which, according to Salisbury's opinion (who, in his speech preceding, calls it an *enforced cause*) could only be procured by foreign arms: and the *brave respect* was the love of his country. Yet the Oxford editor, for *compulsion* reads *compulsion*.  
WARBURTON.

Line 154. — *an angel spake;*) Sir T. Hanmer, and after him Dr. Warburton, read here, *an angel* speeds. I think unnecessarily. The dauphin does not yet hear the legate indeed, nor pretend to hear him; but seeing him advance, and concluding that he comes to animate and authorize him with the power of the church, he cries out, *at the sight of this holy man, I am encouraged as by the voice of an angel.* JOHNSON.

Line 197. — *as I have bank'd their towns?*] *Bank'd their towns* means, thrown up fortifications, or rather entrenchments, before their towns. STEEVENS.

Line 231. — *take the hatch;*] *To take the hatch,* is to *leap the hatch*. *To take a hedge* or a *ditch* is the hunter's phrase. STEEVENS.

Line 341. — *rated treachery,*] It were easy to change *rated* to *hated* for an easier meaning, but *rated* suits better with *fine*. The dauphin has *rated* your treachery, and set upon it a *fine* which your lives must pay. JOHNSON.

Line 364. Right in *thine eye*.] This is the old reading. *Right* signifies *immediate*. STEEVENS.

Line 366. ——— happy newness, &c.] *Happy innovation*, that purposes the restoration of the ancient rightful government. JOHNSON.

Line 410. ——— *thou, and eyeless night* ;] Thus Pindar calls the moon, the *eye of night*. WARBURTON

Line 511. *And all the shrouds*,] Shakspeare here uses the word *shrouds* in its true sense. The *shrouds* are the great ropes, which come from each side of the mast. In modern poetry the word frequently signifies the *sails of a ship*.

MALONE.

Line 521. *Were in the washes, all unwarily, &c*] This untoward accident really happened to king John himself. As he passed from Lynn to Lincolnshire, he lost by an inundation all his treasure, carriages, baggage, and regalia.

MALONE.

END OF THE ANNOTATIONS ON KING JOHN.



1. The first part of the document is a list of names and titles, including "The Hon. Mr. Justice" and "The Hon. Mr. Justice".







